

**The Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States of America,  
in China and Japan, 1835-1870. With references to  
Anglican and Protestant Missions.**



Writing is a fundamental quality of Christian experience.  
This image of St. Matthew comes from a Latin Gospel written at Landevennec, Brittany,  
in the late 9<sup>th</sup> or 10<sup>th</sup> century.  
Gift of Bishop Leofric (d1072) to Exeter Cathedral, England.  
Bodleian Library, MS. Auct. D.2.16. Oxford University, England.

**© Ian Welch 2013.**  
Working paper.



**The Protestant Episcopal Church  
of the United States of America,  
in China and Japan, 1835-1870.**

**美國聖公會**

**With references to  
Anglican and Protestant Missions.**

**Ian Welch**

**Department of Pacific and Asian History  
School of Culture, History and Language  
College of Asia and the Pacific  
Australian National University  
Canberra, Australia.**

**Email: [a186081@bigpond.net.au](mailto:a186081@bigpond.net.au)  
Post: PO Box 7034, Farrer ACT 2607, Australia.**

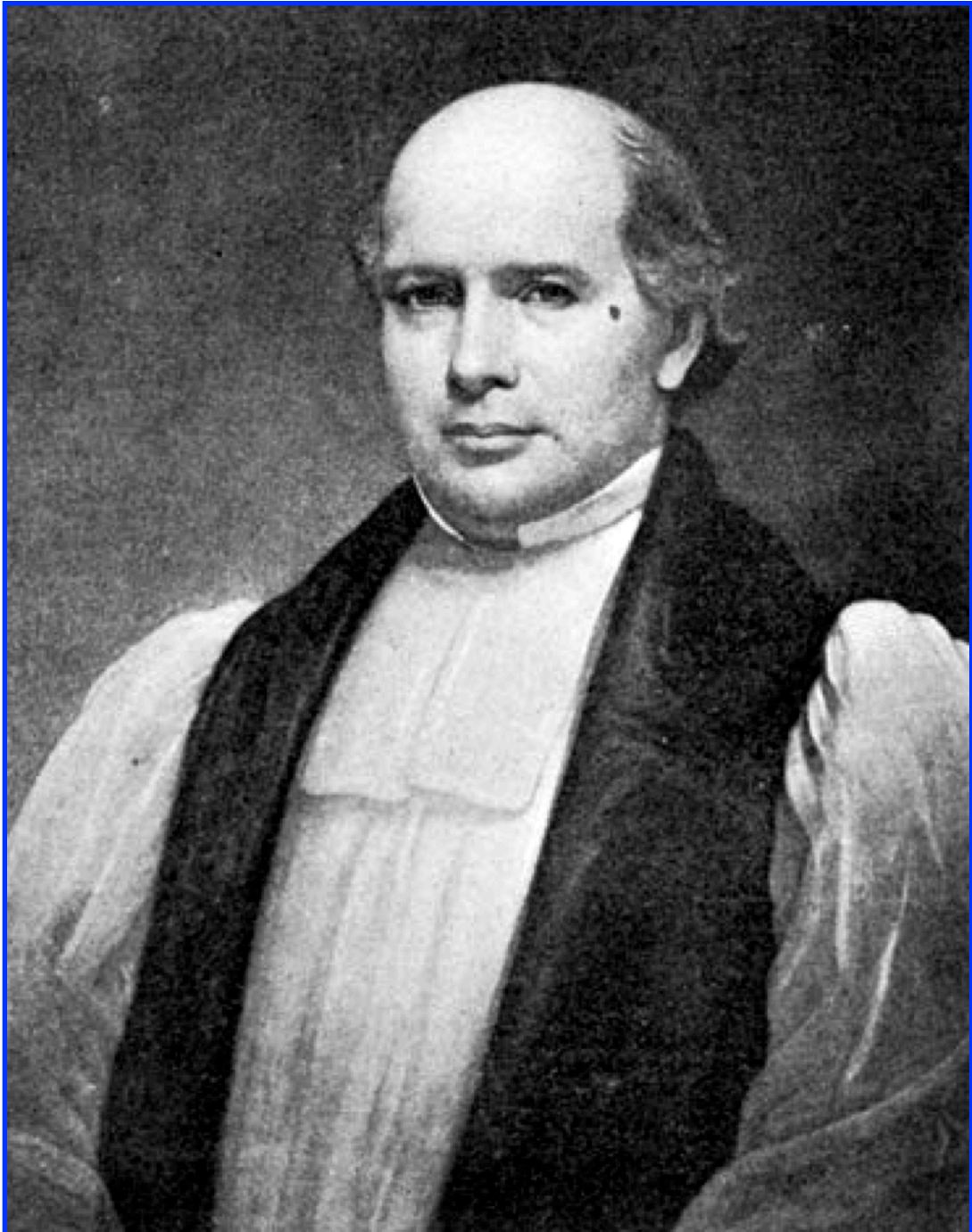


# Part 1

# INTRODUCTION



**The Rt. Rev. William Jones Boone.**  
**First American Episcopal Foreign Missionary Bishop.**  
**First Bishop of the Anglican Communion in China.**



*The Bishops of the American Church Mission in China.*  
(Hartford, Connecticut, Church Missions Publishing Co, 1906).  
Online 1 January 2013 at— <http://anglicanhistory.org/asia/china/bishops1908/>

# AMERICAN PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH MISSIONARIES IN CHINA, 1835-1870.<sup>1</sup>

Arrived	Withdrew	Died	Service-Years	
1835	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b> (Java) (Diocese of New York). <b>(General Theological Seminary, New York).</b> <b>Mrs. Sarah Sophia Medhurst Lockwood.</b> <sup>2</sup>	1839	1883	4 yrs
	<b>Rev. Francis R. Hanson.</b> (Java) (Prince George County, Maryland. Diocese of Maryland, Virginia). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1833).</b> <sup>3</sup> <b>Appointed 23 March 1835.</b> <sup>4</sup> <b>1835, Rector, Christ Church, Prince George's County MD.</b> <b>1844, Rector, St Paul's, Calvert County MD.</b>	1838		3 yrs
1837	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b> <b>Consecrated Bishop, 1844.</b> (Diocese of South Carolina), <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1835).</b> <b>Mrs. Sarah Amelia De Saussure Boone (1st wife).</b> <sup>5</sup> (Diocese of South Carolina).		17 July, 1864. Shanghai.	24 yrs
1845	<b>Mrs Phoebe Caroline Elliott Boone) 2<sup>nd</sup> wife).</b> (Diocese of South Carolina).		1842, Xiamen. 5 yrs	
	<b>Miss Eliza Gillett.</b> Teacher. (Derby, Connecticut). (1845, Mrs. Elijah Bridgman ABCFM) <sup>6</sup>	1845	1864, Suez.	1 mth
	<b>Rev. Henry W. Wood.</b> <sup>7</sup> <b>Baltimore, Md.</b> (Diocese of Virginia), <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary).</b> <b>(later chaplain US Navy;</b> <b>Diocese of Iowa; &amp; Rector, St Mark's Chicago)</b> <b>Church of the Saviour, Philadelphia.</b> <b>Mrs. Wood. Baltimore, Md.</b>	1845		1 yr
		1845		1 yr

- 
- 1 *An Historical Sketch of the China Mission of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the U. S. A.*, (New York, The Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, 1893). 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition.
  - 2 "Memoir of the Late Mrs. Lockwood of Batavia," *Evangelical Magazine and Missionary Chronicle*, August 1838, pp 365-369.
  - 3 Goodwin, W.A.R., *History of the Theological Seminary in Virginia and its Historical Background*, (New York, E.S. Gorham, 1923), p. 175. Jones, Richard J and J. Barney Hawkins, *Staying One, Remaining Open: Educating Leaders for a 21st Century Church*, (Harrisburg PA, Morehouse Publishing, 2010), p. 30.
  - 4 *The Missionary Record of the Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society of the Protestant Episcopal church in the United States of America*, May 1835, p. 61.
  - 5 Parents. Henry William De Saussure and Elizabeth Ford De Saussure. Sarah's children. Henry William Boone, b. 1838; Mary Eliza Boone, b.1841.
  - 6 See discussion of Miss Gillett's marriage in Lin Mei-mei, *The Episcopal Missions in China, 1835-1900*, PhD (unpublished) University of Texas at Austin, May 1984, pp 131-133. There is evidence in this collection of Gillett's continuing association with the Episcopal Mission.
  - 7 Retired due to ill-health. Richmond, Annette B., *The American Episcopal Church in China*, (New York, Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, 1907), p. 16. Lin, op cit p 132, observes that nearly a quarter of the Episcopal mission staff withdrew, using ill-health as a cover for dissatisfaction. This compares with the withdrawals reported by other US Protestant missions.

Arrived	Withdrew	Died	Service-Years	
	<b>Rev. Richardson Graham.</b> (Diocese of Virginia). <b>(Kenyon College, Ohio; Virginia Theological Seminary, 1844).</b> <b>(1849, Diocese of Pennsylvania;</b> <b>Assistant Minister, St Helena Church, Beaufort, SC (missionary to slaves);</b> <b>Rector, Edgefield and Wiltown, SC; St Andrew's Chapel, Philadelphia;</b> <b>1860, Rector, St David's Radnor; Chaplain, U.S. Hospital Service;</b> <b>1871, St John's Church, Concord; 1890, Missionary Frankford, Diocese of Pennsylvania).</b>	1847	2 yrs	
	<b>Mrs. Graham.</b>	1847	2 yrs	
	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> <b>(b. Barnstable, England, 17 February 1817.</b> <b>Ohio-Kenyon College, 1840-43; Hon D.D. 1876.</b> <b>Virginia Theological Seminary, 1844).</b> (Diocese of Ohio-Deacon 1844; Priest 1845). LATER PEC Mission to Chinese, St. John's Church, Oakland, California; Episcopal Church Mission, Shanghai, 1845-1861. Trinity Church, Washington, 1862. Christ Church, Pelham NY 1864. Seaman's Chaplain, Shanghai 1868-1872. US Consular and Military Chaplain, Yokoham, Japan, 1874. Professor of Ethics and History, Imperial University, Tokyo, Japan, 1874. Retired to London England, 1885. Associated with English Church Missionary Society 1885-1890.	1861	1890. England	16 yrs
	<b>Mrs. Jane Mary Winter-Syle.</b> (1st wife)	1859	1859.	
	<b>Rebecca Janet Cunningham-Washington-Syle</b> (2 <sup>nd</sup> wife).			
	<b>Miss Emma G. Jones.</b> <sup>8</sup> Teacher. (Mobile, Alabama). <b>(Boys' School, Shanghai.</b>	1851	1879, Baltimore.	16 yrs
	<b>Miss Mary J. Morse.</b> <sup>9</sup> Teacher. (Boston, Massachusetts). <b>Principal, Girls' School, Shanghai.</b>	1852	1888	7 yrs
1847	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b> (Diocese of Michigan) From <b>Grace Ch, Port Huron &amp; Trinity Ch, St Clair, 1845).</b>		Lost at sea, 1849 Tuberculosis	1 yr
1850	<b>Miss Caroline Tenney.</b> <sup>10</sup> Teacher. (New Hampshire). (Mrs. Cleveland Keith.)		1862. Died of cancer in San Francisco. Buried New York.	
	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay.</b> <sup>11</sup> Teacher. (Vermont).		1878. Died in Chefoo. Reinterred Shanghai.	27 yrs

- 8 Lin Mei-mei, The Episcopal Missions in China, 1835-1900, PhD (unpublished) University of Texas at Austin, May 1984. Lin Mei-mei, The Episcopalian Women Missionaries in Nineteenth-Century China: What Did Race, Gender and Class Mean to Their Work, pp 133-188, in *Dong Hwa Journal of Humanistic Studies*, No 3, July 2001. (Taiwan, National Dong Hwa University, College of Humanities and Social Science.
- 9 "Miss Morse, having means of her own, drew no salary from the Missionary Treasury, and labored for seven years.,, in connection with the Mission School, when failing health caused her return home.'
- 10 Tenney, William C., *Memoir of Mrs. Caroline P. Keith*, (New York, D. Appleton & Co, 1864). Letters from Caroline to family and friends.
- 11 Welch, Ian, "Lydia Mary Fay and the American Church Mission in China, International Bulletin of Missionary Research, January 2012. Proceedings of the Board of Missions of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, 35<sup>th</sup> Annual Meeting, New York, October 1970. (New York, American Church Press Company, 1870), p 34.

Arrived		Withdrew	Died	Service-Years
	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> <sup>12</sup> (Diocese of Virginia). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1845; College of William and Mary D.D. 1873).</b> <b>(Grace Church Rockbridge before China).</b>	1881	1886, Virginia.	30 yrs
	<b>Mrs. Rose Points Nelson.</b> (sister of John T. Points)	1881	1885.	30 yrs
	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> <sup>13</sup> (Alexandria Va, Diocese of Virginia). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1850).</b>		1862.	--
	<b>John Trevis Points.</b> Teacher. <sup>14</sup> (Diocese of Virginia). Stuaton, Virginia, <b>Boys School, Shanghai.</b> <b>Rev. John Trevis Points, St Peter's, New Kent; St John's, Richmond.</b>	1856	1860	5 yrs
1853	<b>Miss Catherine E. Jones.</b> Teacher. <sup>15</sup> (Washington, DC).		1863 24 Nov. Smallpox	--
1854	<b>Miss Emma J. Wray.</b> Teacher. <sup>16</sup> (Augusta, Georgia).	1855		1 yr
	<b>Miss Jeannette R. Conover.</b> Teacher. <sup>17</sup> (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania). (m 8 Aug 66. Rev Elliot Heber. Thomson)		1889, D Ashbourne PA,	--
1855	<b>Melancthon W. Fish, M D.</b> <sup>18</sup> Mrs. (Maitland)Fish. (Albion, Michigan)	1856 1856		1 yr 1 yr
1856	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams.</b> <sup>19</sup> <b>Richmond Va.</b> (Diocese of Virginia). D. 1855, Priest 1857. <b>(College of William and Mary; Virginia Theological Seminary, 1855.</b> <b>Shanghai 1856-1859; Nagaski, Japan, 1859-1909.</b> <b>Consecrated Bishop in China &amp; Japan, 1866.</b> <b>Resigned episcopate 1889; Remained in Japan to 1908.</b>		1910 Died Richmond VA	

12 An ancestor, General Thomas Nelson, was a signatory to the Declaration of Independence.

13 Son of Prof. Keith, Virginia Theological Seminary. Tenney, William C., *Memoir of Mrs. Caroline P. Keith*, (New York, D. Appleton & Co, 1864), p. 206, Drowned while saving others in shipwreck at San Francisco while enroute to New York.

14 Rev. John T. Points died in 1860 less than twelve months after becoming Rector of St. John's Church, Richmond VA. His funeral sermon was preached by the Rev. Robert Nelson. Points was 4 months short of 30 years of age. Se Moore, J. S. ed., *Annals of Henrico Parish*, Richmond, VA, Trustees of St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church, 1904), pp 159-162.

15 See Lin Mei Mie, op cit.

16 Retired due to ill-health. *Spirit of Missions*, Vol 20, Nos 11-12, November-December 1855, p. 584.

17 Lin Mei-mei, *The Episcopalian Women Missionaries*, op cit, pp. 146- 150.

18 *Spirit of Missions*, Vol 21 No 5, May 1856, p. 283.

19 "Dr. M. W. Fish. Went out as a Medical Missionary, and reached Shanghai, August 8, 1855, but a few months afterwards, the office of Vice-Consul of the United States at that city was accepted by Dr. Fish, who reimbursed the Committee for the expenses to which they had been subjected for his passage and outfit." Board of Missions of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, *Thirty-Fifth Annual Meeting, held in New York, October 1870*, New York, American Church Press Co, 1870, p. 35. See online 1 January 2013 at — [http://www.braceface.com/medical/Medical\\_Authors\\_Faculty/Fish\\_M\\_W.htm](http://www.braceface.com/medical/Medical_Authors_Faculty/Fish_M_W.htm)

19 "Bishop Williams," *The Bishops of the American Church Mission in China*, (Hartford, Church Missions Publishing Co, 1906). Online 1 January 2012 at — <http://anglicanhistory.org/asia/china/bishops1908/>



Arrived		Withdrew	Died	Service-Years
1856	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Diocese of Virginia <b>(b. Nuneaton, Warwickshire England 1829.</b> <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1855).</b> <b>(Served Shanghai 4 yrs, Nagasaki-10 months from 1859).<sup>20</sup></b> <b>Editorial Assistant, Spirit of Missions 1861---</b>	1860	1912	3 yrs
1859	<b>Rev. Henry M. Parker.</b> (Diocese of South Carolina). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1859).</b> <b>Mrs. Parker.</b>		Killed in Chefoo, 1861. 1861	--
	<b>Rev. Elliot Heber Thomson.</b> (Diocese of Virginia). (Virginia Theological Seminary). <b>Mrs. Jeanette Conover Thomson</b> (m 8 Aug 66)1888 <b>Mrs. Elizabeth Moody McKechnie.</b>		1889 <b>1939</b>	37 yrs
	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith.</b> (Diocese of Alabama). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1859).</b> <b>Mrs. Susan Sparrow-Smith.</b>	1863	1863	4 yrs -
	<b>Rev. Thomas S. Yocom.</b> Philadelphia Pa. (Diocese of Pennsylvania). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary 1859).</b> <b>Rector, Christ Church (Old Swedes), Upper Merion, 1861-70.</b> <b>Mrs. Yocom.</b>	1860		1 yr
	<b>Rev. Samuel I. J. Schereschewsky.</b> <sup>21</sup> <b>Consecrated 2<sup>nd</sup> Missionary Bishop in China, 1877.</b> <b>Resigned episcopate, 1883.</b> (Lithuania, New York, Diocese of Maryland). <b>(General Theological Seminary, New York).</b> Mrs Schereschewsky formerly Susan Mary Waring m 21 April 1868)		1906. Tokyo.	24 yrs
	<b>Rev. Henry Purdon.</b> (b. Dublin, Ireland 1836. (Diocese of Pennsylvania). <b>Virginia Theological Seminary, 1859, 1859</b> <b>D.D.Kenyon College, Ohio).</b> <b>(later Rector, St. James Memorial Church, Diocese of Pittsburgh).</b>	1860	1898 New York	1 yr
	<b>James T. Doyen.</b> (Diocese of Maryland). <b>(Virginia Theological Seminary, 1859).</b> <b>(Superintendent, Boys' School, Shanghai.</b> <b>Left PEC Mission 1861.</b> <b>Secular work Shanghai-to USA 1865.</b> <b>Ordained Minister with Baptist Mission, Japan, 1873.</b> <b>1 year; Oakland CA, 1875).</b> <sup>22</sup> <b>Mrs. Jane M. Doyen.</b> [mother of James T. Doyen]	1861	1861	2 yrs 1 yr

- 20 Liggins, Rev. John, *The Great Value and Success of Foreign Missions...* (New York, The Baker and Taylor Co., 1888). *New York Times*, 2 May 1900. Letter from John Liggins, 30 April 1900, Cape May, New Jersey.
- 21 "Bishop Schereschewsky," *The Bishops of the American Church Mission in China*, (Hartford, Church Missions Publishing Co, 1906). Online 1 January 2013 at— <http://anglicanhistory.org/asia/china/bishops1908/>
- 22 Wylie, op cit, p. 254. *The Friend*, Vol 32, No 8, August 1875, p. 72.

(Diocese of Maryland).

Arrived	Withdrew	Died	Service-Years
1859	<b>Mr. Edward Hubbell.</b> (Diocese of New York). (Virginia Theological Seminary).	1861	--

**12 APRIL 1861,**  
**AMERICAN CIVIL WAR BEGINS<sup>a</sup>**

“A dreadful destroyer of domestic intercourse.”  
Bishop William Jones Boone, 5 March 1864.

## 17 July 1864 DEATH OF RT. REV. WILLIAM JONES BOONE, Sr., Age 53 years.

**9 APRIL 1865**  
**CIVIL WAR ENDS with SURRENDER OF GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE.**

### POST-1864 ARRIVALS.

1866	<b>Rev. Augustus E. Hohing.</b> 1876 (New Brunswick, New Jersey). (Ex-German Lutheran Church) <b>Mrs. Henrietta Hohing.</b>	1885. Hankow, 1867.	10 yrs 1
1867	<b>Miss Susan Mary Waring.</b> Brooklyn, New York City; (St. Ann’s Church, Brooklyn, NY) Parker Collegiate Institute, Brooklyn. (Mrs. Schereschewsky—Married Shanghai 21 April 1868).	1909.	--
1869	<b>Rev. Samuel R. J. Hoyt.</b> (New Hampshire) (Professor, Griswold College, Davenport, Iowa) <b>Mrs. Eliza Hoyt.</b>	1881 1881	12 yrs 12 yrs
1870	<b>Rev. Wm. Jones Boone, Jr.</b> <sup>23</sup> Princeton- 1865; Philadelphia Divinity School; Virginia Theological Seminary, 1867-8). Consecrated 3 <sup>rd</sup> Missionary Bishop in China, 1884. <b>Mrs. Mary Carolina De Saussure Boone.</b> <b>Mrs. Henrietta F. Harris Boone.</b>	5 Oct 1891. Typhoid. d 1875.	--

23 “Bishop Boone The Second,” *The Bishops of the American Church Mission in China*, (Hartford, Church Missions Publishing Co, 1906). Online 1 January 2013 at— <http://anglicanhistory.org/asia/china/bishops1908/>

# CHRONOLOGY OF THE PEC MISSION IN SHANGHAI, 1844-1870.

Source: Gray, Arthur R., and Arthur M. Sherman, *The Story of the Church in China*,  
(New York, The Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society, 1913), pp 353-355.

1834	May 14.	Board of Missions votes to establish a mission in China.
	July 14.	Rev. Henry Lockwood appointed.
1835	March.	Rev. Francis R. Hanson appointed.
	June 2.	Departure of missionaries.
	Oct. 4.	Missionaries reach Canton.
	Dec. 22.	Arrival in Batavia.
1836	Feb. 17.	Marriage of Mr. Lockwood.
	Aug. 9.	Death of Mrs. Lockwood. (Miss Sophia Medhurst, daughter of Rev. W. H. Medhurst of London Missionary Society.)
1837	Jan. 17.	Rev. William J. Boone, M.D., appointed.
	July 8.	Dr. and Mrs. Boone sail.
	Oct. 22.	The Boones reach Batavia. Mr. Hanson retires.
1839	Jan.	Boys School in Batavia reorganized.
	April 6.	Mr. Lockwood retires.
1841		Mission removes to Macao.
1842	Feb.	Removal to Amoy. Five treaty-ports opened in China.
	Aug. 30.	Death of Mrs. Boone.
1843		Dr. Boone goes to America (spring.)
	Nov. 14.	Miss Eliza Gillett appointed.
1844	Oct. 26.	Dr. Boone consecrated Bishop of China.
1844	Dec. 4.	Mission party sails: Bishop and Mrs. Boone, Rev. Henry W. and Mrs. Wood, Rev. Richardson and Mrs. Graham, Miss Gillette, Miss Morse, Miss Emma G. Jones.
1845	April 24.	Missionaries reach Hongkong.
	June 17.	Mission established at Shanghai.
	Nov. 19.	Rev. E. W. and Mrs. Syle arrive. The Woods retire.
1846	Easter Day.	First Baptism: Wong Kong-chai.
1847	Jan. 1 6.	The Grahams retire.
	Aug. 28.	Rev. P. D. Spalding arrives.
1848	Oct, 22.	Yen Yung-Kiung baptized.
1849	Sept.	Death of Mr. Spalding.
1850	Jan. 6.	Christ Church, Shanghai native city, consecrated
	Aug. 2.	Arrival of Miss Tenney.
1851	March.	Arrival of Miss Fay.
	Dec. 25.	Arrival of Rev. Robert and Mrs. Nelson, Mr. Keith, Mr. Points. Miss Morse retires.
	Sept. 7.	Wong Kong-chai ordained deacon.
	Dec. 31.	Girls boarding-school opened in Shanghai.
1853	Jan. 30.	Arrival of Miss C. Jones.
	Feb.	Mrs. Wong baptized. (The first girl in Miss Jones' School.) Church of Our Saviour, Shanghai, built during this year.
1853	Sept.	Tai-pings infest Shanghai.
1854	April 4.	Arrival of Miss Conover.
	April 27.	Marriage of Mr. Keith and Miss Tenney.
1855	Aug. 3.	Arrival of Dr. Fish,
1856	Jan. I.	Dr. Fish resigns.
	June 28.	Arrival of Rev. C. M. Williams and Rev. John Liggins. Mr. Points retires.

1857		Station opened in Sinza, District of Shanghai. A school for blind established in Shanghai.
	June.	Soochow visited.
1858	Feb.	Station opened in Zangzok [Dzang Zok].
1859	Dec.	Zangzok abandoned.
		Mr. Liggins and Mr. Williams appointed to Japan.
	Dec. 21.	Arrival of large party of missionaries, among them Rev. Elliot H. Thomson and Rev. Samuel I. J. Schereschewsky.
	Dec 28.	Death of Mrs. Syle.
1859		During this year a riot in Shanghai. Mission church damaged. Agreement concerning Episcopal jurisdiction with the English Church.
1860		Renewed rebellions in China.
1861	Jan.	Mr. Syle withdraws. Miss Emma Jones retires.
	April.	Chefoo opened by Mr. and Mrs. Parker, Mr. and Mrs. Smith.
1861		Boys school, Shanghai, closed.
	Oct.	Mr. Parker murdered by rebels in Chefoo.
1862	July 10.	Death of Mrs. Keith in San Francisco.
	July 14.	Death of Mrs. Smith at Chefoo.
	July 27.	Mr. Keith lost in the burning of S. S. Golden Gate.
	July.	Mr. Schereschewsky at Peking.
1863	April.	Mr. Smith retires. Chefoo abandoned.
	Nov. 8.	Rev. Wong Kong-chai advanced to priesthood.
	Nov. 24.	Death of Miss C. Jones.
1864	Jan. 20.	Death of Mrs. Boone at Suez.
	July 17.	Death of Bishop Boone.
1866	Oct. 3.	Bishop Williams consecrated. Hospital work begun in Shanghai.
1868	Jan. 14.	Bishop Williams arrives Shanghai.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Letters by or about women shown in red, i.e., *Mrs. Phoebe Boone*.

<b>Part 1 Introduction.</b>	i - cxxxvii
<b>American Protestant Episcopal Church Missionaries in China, 1835-1870.</b>	<b>vi-x</b>
Table of Contents.	xi
Illustrations.	cxvii
Maps.	cxxvii
Chinese Treaties with Foreign Powers.	cxxviii
Presidents of the United States during the ministry of William Jones Boone, Sr.	cxxix
Works in Translation by Episcopal Missionaries to 1900.	cxxx
Note on Chinese Dialects.	cxxxii
The Chung Hua Sheng Hung Hui, 聖公會 [The Holy Catholic Church in China].	cxxxiii
Chronology of the period 1835-1865.	cxxxiv
Resources.	cxxxv

<b>Part 2. The China Vision.</b>	<b>4-156</b>
<b>2.1 Introduction</b>	<b>4</b>
Special Thanks.	4
Sources	4
The Table of Contents	4
Focus	4
Missionary History—Observations	5
Language and Vision in Missionary History	6
Invisible Missionaries	7
Religious, Church & Missionary Histories.	9
Missionary Hagiography	10
Missionary Exceptionalism.	12
Female Education	12
2.2 Missions & Imperialism.	14
2.3 Missionaries & Social Status in China.	18
2.4 Missionaries & Housing.	24
2.5 Missionaries & Social Separation in China.	27
2.6 19 <sup>th</sup> Century Protestant Worldview.	33
2.7 Exceptionalism & Millenarianism.	43
2.8 The Protestant Episcopal Church & Missions.	47
2.9 Protestant Beginnings in China.	49
2.10 Protestant Missionary Impact on China.	51
2.11 Expatriate World in China.	58
2.12 Missionaries & Governments.	63
2.13 Protestants & Catholics.	74
2.14 Culture Shock in Missionary History.	75
2.15 A Thorny Anglo-American Cultural & Religious Alliance.	92
2.16 Anglican & Episcopal Ecclesiology in China.	95
2.17 Episcopal Missionaries & Slavery.	102
2.18 The Civil War & the Episcopal Church in China.	106
2.19 Family & Gender Issues.	116
2.20 Evangelism, Education and Curriculum.	124
2.21 Language Issues—“Terms for God” Debate.	139
2.22 Recurrent Crises in the Episcopal Mission.	140
2.23 A PEC Missionary College.	154

### Part 3 The Beginning.

157-198

3.1	The Beginning of American Episcopal Foreign Missions.	158
3.2	The Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society of the Protestant Episcopal Church (PEC) in the United States of America.	160
3.3	The Rev. Augustus Foster Lyde.	161
3.4	Thinking About China, 1834.	166
3.5	Protestant Episcopal Church: Board of Missions and Committees for Domestic and Foreign Missions.	178
3.6	Ecclesiological Trends in the Protestant Episcopal Church.	181
3.7	William Jones Boone and the Beaufort Revival, 1831.	184
3.8	The Episcopal Concept of a “Missionary Bishop.”	189
3.9	PEC missionary journal—“The Spirit of Missions/”	195

### Part 4 Java—1835-1839.

199-248

1835, March 23.	<b>Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	200
1835, May.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	201
1835, May 29.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	202
1835, May 29.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b> Additional Instructions for the Missionaries to China.	203
1836, September 17.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	206
1835, October 4.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	207
1836, December 10.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood</b> marries Sarah Sophia Medhurst.	209
1836, December 22.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	212
1837, January 17.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone</b> appointed to Java.	214
1837, February 22,	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	218
1837.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Episcopal Missions and Education.	217
1837, February 22.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	208
1837, March 20.	<b>Rev. Karl (Charles) Gutzlaff.</b>	222
1837, March 22.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	224
1837, April 22.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	224
1837, May 23.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	225
1837.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—shipboard sermon.</b>	226
1837.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	227
1837, July 15.	<b>Sarah Amelia Boone</b> from father, Henry William De Saussure.	228
1837, September 11.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	228
1837, November 15.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	230
1837, November 22.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	231
1838, January 22.	<b>Rev. Francis Hanson.</b>	232
1838, May 17.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	232
1838, August.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Summary Report, China Mission.	233
1838, August 11.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	235
1838, September 7.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	237
1838, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Annual Report of the China Mission.	239
1838, November 22.	<b>Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	241
1839, January 30.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone and Rev. Henry Lockwood.</b>	241
1839, February 13.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone</b> to Rev. William Barnwell. (part)	244
1839, April 3.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	245
1839, April 12.	<b>Charles Aldis, Treasurer, Foreign Missions Committee,</b> to Rev. William Barnwell.	247

### Part 5 Amoy 1839-1843.

249-304

1839, June 8.	<b>Sarah Amelia Boone.</b> Birth of William Jones Boone Jr.	250
1839, September 5.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	250
1840, January.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b> Alone in Java.	252
1840, January 31.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b> First Annual Letter.	252

1840, August 6.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	256
1840, August.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	257
1841, January 4.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	257
1841, January 22.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone. Macao.</b>	257
1841, June 11.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—Macao—Amoy (Xiamen).</b>	258
1841, July.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Report.</b>	260
1841, August 27.	<b>Amoy [Xiamen] captured by British, (First Opium War).</b>	261
1841, September 15.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	261
1841, October 13.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	262
1841, November.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	263
1842, February 1.	<b>Sarah Amelia Boone to Rev. William (Willie) Jones Boone.</b>	263
1842, February 1.	<b>Sarah Amelia Boone to Rev. William (Willie) Jones Boone.</b>	264
1842, March	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone and Rev. David Abeel visit Amoy.</b>	264
1842, March 31.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	269
1842, May 11.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	270
1842, June 16 to August 11.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	270
1842, June 16.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	271
1842, July.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	272
	<b>Death of Mrs. Sarah Amelia Boone.</b>	274
1842, August 5.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	275
1842, September 21.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone.</b>	277
	<b>Death of Mrs. Sarah Amelia Boone.</b>	277
1842, November 3	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone to Rev. William Barnwell.</b>	285
1843, April 4.	<b>Rev. J. L. Cooke to Rev. William Barnwell.</b>	287
	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone re medicines needed.</b>	295
1843, April.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee. Prospects in China.</b>	288
1843, June.	<b>Mr. Robert W. Barnwell re China Mission.</b>	295
1843, June.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—New Missionaries</b>	295
	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—Ku Lang-Su, Xiamen.</b>	296
1843, September 13.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone to General Theological Seminary NY.</b>	299
	<b>Rev. Vincent Stanton, Colonial Chaplain, Hong Kong, Donation to PEC.</b>	301
	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith consecrated as First Anglican Bishop of Hong Kong. (2<sup>nd</sup> Bishop of Anglican Communion in China).</b>	303

## **Part 6 Missionary Bishop Boone, 1843-1844.**

**305-334**

1843, February 10.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Secretary, to Rt. Rev. W. R. Whittingham, Maryland-Rev. J.W. Mills to assist Rev. William Boone, China.</b>	306
1843, August.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone re deputational work in United States.</b>	307
1843, September.	<b>Letter from Shanghai resident re Boone and Missionaries in China.</b>	308
1843, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	309
1844.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—Deputational visits, US.</b>	311
1844, May 14.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—Deputational visits, US.</b>	312
	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Impact of Boone’s deputations.</b>	313
1844, June 14.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay, Alexandria VA to Rev. P. P. Irving, Secretary, Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	314
1844, July 3.	<b>Sino-American Treaty of Wangxia and establishment of PEC Mission at Shanghai.</b>	314
1844, July 20.	<b>Rev. C. B. Dana to Rev. P. P. Irving, Secretary, Foreign Missions Committee, New York, re Missionary Employment of Miss Lydia MARY Fay.</b>	315
1844, August.	<b>Rev. William Jones Boone—Deputational visit-Beaufort, SC.</b>	316
1844, October 26.	<b>Consecration of Missionary Bishops. China- William Jones Boone. in Sultan of Turkey’s dominions and dependencies (Ottoman Empire)- Rt. Rev. Horatio Southgate.</b>	316

	Missionary Bishop in Arkansas-	
	<b>Rt. Rev. Dr. George W. Freeman.</b>	
	Address of House of Bishops to Missionary Bishop to China.	318
	Foreign Missions Committee Appeal to Clergy and Laity.	
	Consecration Sermon by <b>Rt. Rev. Stephen Elliott</b> , Georgia.	320
1844, November 14.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> —Appointments to China.	325
	Rev. and Mrs. Henry W. Woods,	
	Rev. and Mrs. Richardson Graham,	
	Rev. and Mrs. Edward W. Syle.F	
	<b>Miss Eliza Jane Gillett,</b>	
	<b>Miss Emma C. Jones,</b>	
	<b>Miss Mary J. Morse,</b> teachers.	Instu
	Shanghai as missionary station.	
	Schools for Chinese youth, teachers, translators and clergy.	Emj
	Centrality of Doctrine of Justification by Faith.	
	Centrality of Christian example-Purity of Life.	
	Common Christianity and cooperation with other Protestants.	
1844, December 5.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee: Instructions to Bishop Boone.</b>	326
1844, December 25.	<b>Letter from a Female Missionary Teacher, at sea.</b>	332

## **Part 7 Shanghai, 1845-1847.**

**335-450**

1845, January 6.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> —at sea. Group shares Holy Communion for first time.	336
1845, January 11	<b>Bishop Boone</b> —at sea.	336
1845, February.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	337
1845, March 19.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> and party arrive Shanghai.	337
1845, March.	<b>Earlier Protestant Missions in China.</b>	338
	Revisions of Chinese Bible texts (Shanghai Translation Committee).	
	Rev. Vincent Stanton and Christian Knowledge Society (SPCK).	
	English Prayer-Book and Homily Society.	
	English Religious Tract Society.	
1845, April 25.	<b>Bishop Boone meets Rev. George Smith.</b>	340
1845, April 28.	<b>From the Wife of a Missionary.</b>	341
	Arrival in China. Missionary hospitality.	
	Rev. Samuel Robbins Brown. Rev. Dr. Bridgman. Rev V. Stanton.	
1845, April 30.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> British and American Protestant Diplomacy	342
	Ke-ing, Imperial Commissioner and Viceroy.	
	Memorial to Emperor re missionaries.	
	Emperor's Approval	
1845, May.	<b>Mrs Phoebe Boone.</b>	344
	Climate of Shanghai.	
	Dr. Henry Boone, brother of Bishop Boone, in Shanghai.	
	Handling mail. in Shanghai	
	Expecting baby.	
1845, May 11	<b>Bishop Boone</b> and Rev. Dr. Peter Parker, Canton.	346
1845, May 17.	<b>Birth of William Jones Boone, Jr.</b>	347
1845, May 26.	<b>Miss Eliza Jane Gillett.</b> Canton.	347
1845, May 26.	<b>From the Wife of a Missionary.</b>	349
	Anglican Confirmation by Bishop Boone in Hong Kong.	
	Rev. George Smith, Church Missionary Society.	
	Chinese Idols.	
	Missionary Hospitality.	
	Chinese children frightened by foreign missionaries.	
	Visit to Macao, Catholic 'Corpus Christi' procession.	
1845, May 28.	<b>From the Wife of a Missionary.</b> Letter to PEC Sunday Schools.	352
1845, June 3.	<b>Miss Eliza Jane Gillett.</b> Canton.	353
1845, June 28.	<b>Miss Eliza Jane Gillett.</b> Marries Rev. Elijah C. Bridgman, ABCFM.	354



1845, July 6.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> to Henry A. De Saussure, Charleston SC.	355	
1845.	<b>Appointment of Henry Griswold Wolcott as acting US Consul,</b>	356	
1845, August.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—</b> Annual Report-China Mission.	357	
1845, October- November	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	358	
1845, November.	<b>Mrs Phoebe Boone.</b> Baptism of Chinese by Rev. Walter Medhurst.	359	
	<b>Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).</b> Employment of Chinese language teachers.		
1845, December	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> facing bankruptcy.	360	
1845, December 1.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Private Letter re State of the China Mission. Description of Shanghai. Letter from Rev. Walter M. Lowrie, Presbyterian missionary.	361	
1846, March 6.	<b>From the Wife of a Missionary.</b> Study of Chinese Language. Opening of Boys' School, Miss Morse and Miss Jones. Religious State of Chinese. Morrison Education Society.	365	Des New
	<b>Mary Ann Aldersey, Independent English woman missionary.</b>		
1846, March 24.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Translation. Baptism of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).	367	
1846, April 17,	<b>Bishop Boone</b> to sister-in-law, Mrs. Blandings. <b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone.</b> Baptism of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).	368	
1846, April 20	<b>From the Wife of a Missionary. (Mrs Boone?)</b> to support group in US. General mission news. <b>Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci),</b> Life story. Boys' School. Amoy: Memoranda of Protestant Missions.	368	
1846, May 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Itineration and Tract Distribution.	373	
1846, May 22.	<b>Thomas Boone—</b> birth	373	
1846, cJune.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> from January to December 1846. Arrival at the seat of the mission, i.e., Shanghai. Anglican/Episcopal conduct of British religious services. Mission to foreign Seamen—Bethel ship. Study of the Language. Itineration into Country—Roman Catholics. Tract Distribution. Allocation of district responsibilities to clergy in Shanghai. Cordial Civility of the country-people. Loong-ho (Longhua) village and pagoda. Itineration. Doubts about mission schooling abandoned. Poverty and Beggars always present. Marriage of a Converted Chinese conducted by Rev. Walter Medhurst. Shanghai Translation Committee. Baptism of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci). House in old city, contact with Chinese traders. Visitors rarely return when aware of religious purpose of foreigners. Funeral service for expatriate residents. Tract Distribution to grain tribute junks. Birth of first male child to Mr. and Mrs. Syle. First Shanghai Episcopal public worship service by Bishop Boone.	374	

1846, July 20.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Completed Catechism on the Creed, Ten Commandments, Lord's Prayer and Sacraments. About 70 pages. <sup>24</sup>	380
1846, July 20.	<b>Unknown writer</b> —Episcopal Mission in Shanghai.	380

## THE OPENING OF JAPAN.

1846, July 31.	The Opening of Japan.	382
	<b>Commodore James Biddle's Official Account of his visit to Japan.</b>	362
1846, August 24.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Translation—Gospel of St. Matthew; Catechism for Baptism Candidates (see July 20). Prayer Book Translations: Morning Prayer; Adult Baptism; Confirmation; Holy Communion. Translation—Epistle to the Romans. Enlarging Boys' School.	355
1846, October 12.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Male Layman required to supervise Boys' School. All missionaries to keep journals and report quarterly. Planning for English expatriate church (Holy Trinity Church). Continued Anglican/Episcopal cooperation in English expatriate services.	366
1846, November 29.	<b>Unnamed Episcopal Missionary, (probably Rev. Edward W. Syle).</b> Need for missionaries, especially a physician.	388
1846, n.d.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Request for funds to build Chinese Episcopal Mission Church.	388
1847, January 2.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Rev. T. M'Clatchie [McClatchie], Church Missionary Society, Shanghai.	369 389
1847, January 12.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Translation work. Delays in building projects. Boys' School. Chinese Episcopal Mission Church (estimated cost \$5000).	391
1847, February 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Boys' School. Translation work. More missionaries needed. Retirement of Rev. and Mrs. Richardson Graham.	392
1847, March 11	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Health of Rev. Richardson Graham. Challenges of Chinese Language. Revision of Scriptures (Shanghai Translation Committee) Chinese Enquirers. Physician needed. Chinese National Celebrations and Festivities. Chinese Procession. Chinese New Year's Day. The Chinese Kow Tow. Character of the Chinese Population. Illness of Bishop Boone. Appointment of Rev. Phineas Spalding. National Peculiarities.	393
1847, March 11.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee, Boston.</b> Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.	399
1847, March 15.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Chinese Benevolent Institutions.	399

---

24 This publication was used by other Protestant missionaries.

	Chinese Funeral matters.	
	Beggars.	
	Boys' School. Recreation problems.	
	Temple of Goddess of Mercy—Guan Yin.	
	Chinese children and religious make-believe behaviour.	
	Temple of Taouist (daoist) sect.	
1847, April 6.	<b>Holy Trinity Anglican Church.</b>	402
	Participation of Episcopal Bishop and clergy.	
1847, April 14.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle and Bishop Boone.</b>	403
	Bishop too ill to write.	
	Awaiting arrival of Rev. Phineas Spalding.	
	Boys' School resumes after two week vacation.	
	English Holy Trinity Church.	
	Bishop Boone's postscript re his health.	
1847, May.	<b>Education of Chinese Youth.</b>	405
	Letter by pupil of the first class. "Why do you wish to get an education?"	386
	Letter by pupil of the first class. "What is the chief end of man?"	387
1847, May 4.	<b>Bishop Boone,</b>	408
	<b>Episcopal Jurisdiction in China.</b>	
	English Prayer Book and Homily Society re Prayer Book translation.	
	Report of Bishop Boone to the General Convention.	
1847, May 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Re Episcopal Jurisdiction.	413
1847, May 28.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Re Accommodation for missionaries, Shanghai.	414
1847, May 7.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	414
	Visit to Chinese Temple of the God of the City.	
	Description of ceremonies.	
	Officials read Imperial Edict of Emperor Young-Ching.	
	Dragon Lantern Procession.	
	Other Processions.	
	Meeting re expatriate English church. Enabling role of Bishop Boone.	
	Expatriate horse racing carnival.	
	First Day of the Third Moon in Chinese Calendar. Ceremonies.	
	London Missionary Society missionaries withdraw from Anglican/ Episcopal Services at British Consulate.	
	Celebration of the Sun's Birthday.	
	Arrival of new Taou-tai.	
	Birthday of "Queen of Heaven."	
1847, June 21.	<b>Rev. and Mrs. Elijah Bridgman. (Miss Gillett),</b>	418
1847, June 24.	<b>PEC Board of Missions— 12th Annual Meeting.</b>	418
1847, June 24.	<b>PEC Board of Missions— 12th Annual Report.</b>	418
	State of funds.	
	China Report	
	Report of Bishop Boone to the Board of Missions.	
	<b>Episcopal Jurisdiction</b> —Copy of Correspondence between Bishop Boone and Secretary of the "Prayer Book and Homily Society" of London.	
	Bishop Boone's response.	
1847, June 28.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding,</b> at sea. Description of journey.	429
1847, June 29.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Writing at Bishop Boone's request.	431
	Need for girls's school apparent.	
	China Translation Committee. Encloses minutes.	
	Canton-Dr. Bridgman; Amoy-Mr. Stronach; Mr. Lowrie; Shanghai-Bishop Boone; Rev. Dr. Walter Medhurst.	
1847, July 29.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	432
	\$5,000 needed for school-house.	
	Additional Mission accommodation.	

	Cost of renting property in Shanghai—25% per annum. Favours sending out ordination candidates as missionaries. Finance promised for Chinese Mission Church.	
1847, August 6.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding</b> in Hong Kong. Hospitality of Rev. Vincent Stanton, Colonial Chaplain. Re Chinese Costume and Karl Gutzlaff.	434
1847, August 31.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding</b> in Shanghai. First four days in Shanghai. Syle as local guide. Visited Chinese temples—“Great Golden Temple.” Importance of missionary physician. Boys’ School. Chapel Services. CMS Mission Chapel and Rev. T. McClatchie. Condition of Heathen Nations. Duty of Christians to evangelise heathen.	434
1847, August 31.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee, New York.</b> Rev. Phineas Spalding arrives in Shanghai. Rev. W. Lowrie. Death by drowning after pirate attack.	437
1847, August/Sept.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee, New York.</b> Episcopal Mission Chapel at Shanghai.	437
1847, August 6.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Re Girls’ School possibilities. Grant of \$5000 for school buildings. Unsuitability of Chinese buildings. Visit to Catholic mission house near Shanghai. Chinese Foundling Hospital, Shanghai. Shanghai Translation Committee. Lowrie in Shanghai (see Aug 31). Bishop Boone lays foundation stone of Holy Trinity Church. (8 June 1847). Visit of American Baptist missionaries. Dragon Boat Festival. Shanghai Translation Committee meets. (see June 29). Disagreements. More American Baptists arrive. Visit to Chinese “Temple of Thunder.” Smuggling (opium) and Piracy. French survivors of shipwreck. Lowrie urgently recalled to Ningpo. (See August 21). Arrival of British missionaries of the London Missionary Society.	438
1847, October 7.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b> Fourth Triennial Meeting.	442
1847, October 10.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding.</b> Urgency of new buildings. Male teacher and male physician needed. More clergy needed.	442
1847, October 16.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay to Rev. Charles Backus Dana.</b> Fay’s work as principal of Midway Academy for Ladies.	443
1847, November 18.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Funds in hand for new school and accommodation buildings.	444
1847, November 22.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Second anniversary of Syle’s arrival in Shanghai. Keeping personal diary for information of Foreign Missions Committee. Boys’ School. <b>Boone visits Hongku re new permanent site for Episcopal Mission. (Foundation of American Settlement).</b> Visit to a temple for unveiling of idols. Distributes tracts with Spalding. Discussions with Chinese re idol worship. Preaches first sermon in Chinese. Women missionaries distribute tracts to women.	444

	Distributing Communion offering to Chinese poor (Alms Fund)/ Visits oldest Chinese temple “Abode of Accumulated Goodness.” Temple maintenance around Shanghai generally good.	
1847, December 15.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding.</b> After four months still favourably impressed by Shanghai. Learning Language. Immersion through conversation. Chinese services growing. Importance of Bishop Boone’s work on translation. Boys’ School. Postscript by Bishop Boone re translation and correct translation of “theos.”	447
1847, December 18.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Bishop Boone remains in poor health. Purchase of land for Chinese Mission Church in old Chinese city. Bishop’s house under construction in Hongku. Bishop Boone, Spalding and Syle preparing Gospels in Shanghai dialect. Boys’ School doing well. One boy baptized. Another candidate for baptism. Spalding’s work outlined.	448
1847, December 27.	<b>Unknown writer</b> —old Chinese city of Shanghai. Emptiness of Western side.	450
<b>Part 8 Shanghai, 1848-1849.</b>		<b>451-600</b>
1848, January 1.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay to Rev. Charles B. Dana.</b> First six months as Principal of <u>Midway Academy for Girls</u> . Improvements in girl’s learning and deportment. Examples of poor literacy. Introduction of formal religious studies. Local Episcopal clergyman- low church—“Methodistical.” Superior intellectual quality of Episcopal liturgical worship.	452
1848, January 15.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Building and land purchases at Hongkou. Consular arrangements	454
1848, January 17. 25 Dec. 1847 to 29 April 1848.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett Bridgman.</b> <b>Unknown American Visitor</b> to Shanghai. British Consul note re travel in countryside—24 hours no overnight.	455 456
1848.	<b>The American Settlement, Hongkou (虹口) [Hongkew].</b>	457
1848.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett Bridgman.</b>	458
1848.	<b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone.</b> New setting at Hongkou. Soochow Creek crossed only by ferry boat—sampan.	458
1848.	<b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone.</b> Hongkou, Syle opens “ragged” school.	459
1848.	<b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone to her brother, Bishop Stephen Elliott, Georgia.</b> New mission like large hotel. 100 residents. Improvements in health. Overall improvement in physical environment.	460
1848.	<b>Lydia MARY Fay. American Single Woman Missionary.</b> Motivation—in part, disappointed romance.	464
1848., January 1 to February 28.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Itineration with Spalding. Conversation with paper image makers. Friends of the (foreign) Chinese Hospital. 15,000 Chinese patients. Cost of \$500. Burial, within a Christian merchant’s compound,	465

	of boys' school scholar, Kwoy Chung.(see January 29 below).		
	Boys' School Vacation.		
	Admission of vagrant boy and his disappearance.		
	Chinese New Year Celebrations.		
	All Chinese businesses closed.		
	New Chinese Temple for Chinese general killed in Opium War.		
	Syle and Spalding call on Buddhist priest—Bonze.		
	Protestant missionaries visit Roman Catholic Hospice or missionary home.		Ne
	Chinese New Year Customs—Visit friends within three days of New Year.		
	Woman fortune-teller.		
	Boys' School resumes.		
	Episcopal Jurisdiction in Shanghai, Anglican and Episcopal Churches.		
	Bishop Boone to Anglican Bishop Smith.		
	Bishop Smith to Bishop Boone.		
	English objections to Bishop Boone's proposal on sharing jurisdiction.		
1848, January 29.	<b>Unknown American Visitor</b> to Shanghai— <i>Chinese Repository</i> .	470	
	The International Settlement.		
	Holy Trinity Anglican Church.		
	Contrast with old Chinese city.		
	Gambling.		
	Western New Year.		
	Fire in old city.		
	Baptism of Boys' School scholar, Kwoy Chung.		
	British Consul's Warning about travel outside International Settlement.		
	Shanghai Translation Committee		
	Death of Kwoy Chung.		
	Rumours of attack on foreigners in Shanghai.		
	Report of Europeans with local protection order.		
1848, January 29.	<b>Unknown American Visitor</b> to Shanghai—	472	
	Poverty and Beggary.		
1848.	<b>Lydia MARY Fay</b> to Mrs. Dulany, Alexandria.	474	
	Regrets earlier disagreement and termination of employment as governess.		
	Pleasure at marriage of former student, Rebecca Dulany.		
	Bride's invitation not supported by parents.		
	Social Isolation of teacher employees of wealthy Virginians.		
	Holiday plans.		
	Overall personal loneliness.		
1848, February 8.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding.</b>	475	
	Cooperation between Anglican and Episcopal Clergy.		
	Baptism of Kwoy Chung.		
	Death of Kwoy Chung.		
	Distribution of Communion Alms.		
	Burning of Chinese Kitchen Gods.		
	Chinese New Year. Visit to City Temple.		
	Visit to Temple of Confucius and official ceremonies		
	New Chinese Temple for Chinese general killed in Opium War.		
	Chinese New Year Customs—Visit friends within three days of New Year.		
	Protestant missionaries visit Roman Catholic Hospice/missionary home.		
	Report of Europeans (Catholic missionaries) with local protection order.		
1848, February 18.	<b>Infanticide</b>	479	
1848, March 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	480	Mar
	Targetting of Chinese for conversion.		
	Request from mission school-teacher for burial money refused.		
	Resignation of Chinese mission school-teacher..		
	Lay teacher needed for charitable activity and records		
	abuses of Chinese charities.		

	Beating of Protestant Missionaries. (Medhurst, Muirhead, Lockhart). Beggar family. Death of mother. Refusal to enrol boy. Street Preaching British Consul imposes ban on paying customs until attackers of missionaries apprehended. Ceremonies at City God Temple. Birthday of Goddess of Mercy—Guan Yin. Protestant Missionaries visit Catholic Bishop.		
1848, April 1.	<b>Rev. Phineas Spalding.</b> Marriage of non-Christian Chinese mission school teacher. Honouring Confucius—Animal Sacrifice-consumed by worshippers Beating of Protestant Missionaries. (Medhurst, Muirhead, Lockhart). Unrest among crews of grain tribute junks on Grand Canal. Chinese justice—Cangue and Bambooning. Beggar family. Death of mother. Refusal to enrol boy. Protestant Missionaries visit Catholic Bishop. Theological Exhortation by a Chinese mission-teacher. Land secured for school-buildings.	484	
1848, April 7.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> —Health and management issues.	487	
1848, May 8.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	487	
1848, May 6-30.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Desecration of Chinese coffin sheds—dead people from outside Shanghai. Literary Examination—Public Assembly-Deep emotions revealed. Age range of candidates—from fourteen to old men. News from England. Drowning deaths of American Southern Baptist medical missionaries. Dr. Lockhart—death of father, return to England. Evangelistic preaching. Meets English-speaking young Chinese man. Shanghai Translation Committee.	487	Chi
1848, May 26.	<b>Lydia MARY Fay to Rev. Charles Backus, Alexandria VA.</b> End of first year as Principal of Midway Academy. Tension with subordinate teachers. Thinking about taking new post as a governess. Success with religious teaching.	491	
1848, June 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> The “Three Character Classic” or “Trimetrical Classic.” Another visit to Temple for Chinese general killed in Opium War. Vision of replacing Chinese temples with Christian Churches and Schools. Book on conduct of Chinese girls. Birthday of Kwan-te (Guandi)—Chinese God of War, Friendship & Honour. Holy Trinity Anglican Church opened. Chinese worker go-slow on new school building. William Boone Jr serious illness. Problems of supervising new building work. Moving staff and equipment to new school building. Contrast between Chinese creative arts and ordinary workmen. Missionary relationships with converts. The “Kow-Tow.”	492	
1848, June 5.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Move to new buildings at <b>Hongkou.</b> Donation for building of new Chinese mission church in old city	495	
1848, June 18.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding</b> — Report to Bishop Boone. Evangelistic work. Visit to Chinese Temple and description of procession. New missionaries of the Church Missionary Society. Visit to Chinese opium shop with CMS missionaries.	496	

	Observing mourning over Chinese man's death.		
	Protestant missionaries visit rural village temple.		
	Prevalence of beggars around temples.		
	Chinese crime and punishment—murder.		
	Open-air evangelism in temple precincts.		
	Drowning deaths of American Southern Baptist medical missionaries.		
	Attends CMS Chinese mission church in old city.		
	Discussion with Chinese Catholic woman.		
	Opening of Holy Trinity Anglican Church.		
	Greater facility in preaching in Chinese.		
1848, June 20.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b> 13 <sup>th</sup> Annual Meeting.	499	
1848, July 6.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding</b> —ill-health	501	
	Unable to work for three months—cough, probably tuberculosis.		
1848, September 15.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	502	
	Shanghai Taotai dismissed—former merchant, purchased rank.		
1848, September 15.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	503	
1848, September 28.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b> Fourth Quarterly report to Bishop Boone.	503	
	Future services of Holy Communion to be held in Holy Trinity Anglican Church, ending use of British Consulate.		
	Syle and family move from old city of Shanghai to Hongkou.		
	Continuing need for layman to superintend Boys' School.		
	Bishop and family to occupy his own house at Hongkou.		
	Move of missionaries to Hongkou saving \$500 in rentals.		
	Syle's house in old city occupied by Rev. William Farmer of CMS.		
	Evangelistic work.		
	Spalding—serious illness.		
	Rev. Mr. Atkins [Rev. Joseph Edkins] of London Missionary Society arrives in Shanghai. LMS missionary staff of seven people.		
	<b>Bishop Boone baptized Thomas Boone (2<sup>nd</sup> son) and Elizabeth Jones Syle.</b>		
	Arrival of Rev. John Lowder, British Colonial Chaplain in Shanghai and first minister of Holy Trinity Anglican Church.		
	Distribution of Communion Alms.		
1848. October-December.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b>	506	
	Religious activities. Shortened form of Morning Prayer.		
	Anniversary of Ordination two years earlier in Michigan.		Con
	Baptism of Choo [Chu] Kiung, Boys' School.		
	Translation of Gospel of St. Matthew into Shanghai dialect.		
	Jubilee Services in Shanghai for Church Missionary Society.		
	Discussions with Chinese about Christianity.		
	Catechising Chinese mission servants.		
	Discussions with Buddhist priest—opium smoker.		
	Distribution of tracts— <b>The Two Friends.</b>		Acc
	Purchased land old Shanghai for Chinese mission church, (Christ Church).		
	Confirmation of Tong Choo (Chu) Kiung, Boys' School.		
	More discussions with Buddhist priest—requests money to bury parents.		
1848, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—14<sup>th</sup> Annual Report.</b>	513	
	China. Bishop Boone.		
1848, October 18.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	516	
	Importance of contact with members of the Foreign Co477		
	Report of Bishop Boone.		
	Continuing illness. Unable to lead worship or teach.		
	Laid corner stone of Holy Trinity Anglican Church.		
	Shanghai Translation Committee. Continuing disagreement on theos issue.		Bap
	Holy Communion.		



	Kwuy Chung episode.	
	Chai Kong Wong (Huang Guangci) appointed catech	
mmittee.		
	Health of Missionaries—Spalding, Miss Jones, Miss Morse.	
	Health of Bishop Boone.	
1848.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> (private letter).	517
	Need of clergymen and teachers.	
	Girls’s School needed.	
	Physician needed.	
1848, November 22 to		
1850, February 25.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	518
	Death of Chinese mission teacher—fourth such death. Evangelistic activity.	
	Negotiations for ground for Chinese mission church (Christ Church).	
	Chinese village in Hongkou. Buddhist priests in disagreement.	
	Day-school (aka “Free School”) at South Gate of old city.	
	Funeral of Mrs. Ellen Gilbert-Medhurst, (age 17 years), 1 <sup>st</sup> wife of	
	Walter Medhurst Jr25, Vice-Consul, Amoy.	
	Purchase of ground for Chinese mission church (Christ Church).	
	Need for Girls’ School.	
	Tchu [Chu] Kiung confirmed.	
	Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting.	
	Discussions with enquirers.	
	Chinese criticisms of and accusations against Christian missionaries.	
	One example of an Anti-Christian Tract: “The Pig Sect Gouging the Eyes.”	
	Englishman donates \$70 for support of South Gate Day-School.	
	Meets another Buddhist priest with opium addiction.	
	Vacation at South Gate Day-School.	
	Relationships between Chinese boy and girl in mission.	
	Doubts reports about Chinese literacy levels.	
	Arrival of new French plenipotentiary.	
	Ceremonial visits for Fifth Day of Chinese New Year.	
	Creed, Ten Commandments, Lord’s Prayer tablets erected.	
	Mission ladies visit aristocratic Chinese women.	
	Male members of aristocratic family return visit to missionaries.	
	Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting.	
	Anti-Christian Attack—“Pig Sect Gouging the Eyes.”	
	Widespread presence of Chinese Catholic chapels.	
	Local villagers attend temple for Feast of Lanterns.	
	Difficulty of movement.	
	South Gate Day-School reopens.	
	Opened another day-school.	
	Baptism of Kway Loong, scholar of Boys’ School.	
1848, December 1.	<b>Rev. Pierre Irving, Secretary, Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	528
	Epiphany Collections for Foreign Missions.	
1849, December 12.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Jane Gillett Bridgman.</b>	529
1849, February 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> 4th Annual Report.	530
	Growing Chinese interest. in Christianity.	
	Two baptisms, Ten candidates.	
	Boys’ School doing well.	
	Importance of Christian schools.	
	Chai Kong Wong (Huang Guangci) candidate for ordination.	
	Donations—Boys’ School building;	
	Chinese Mission Church, (Christ Church).	

Atte

25 Oxford Dictionary of National Biography, Sir Walter Henry Medhurst. Online 1 July 2013 at —  
<http://www.oxforddnb.com/view/article/18495>

1849, January-March.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b> Quarterly Report. Distribution of Communion Alms to forty people. Movement in and out of worship services. Catechising of mission servants. Distribution of tracts including “The Two Friends.” Visited village about ten miles from Shanghai — three hour walk. Curiosity of villagers. Visited local temple and preached. Polite reception. Stayed overnight. Rescues small child who fell into moat around old city. Tracts, including “The Two Friends.” Chinese Feast of Lanterns. Fasting discussed. Commences study of Chinese classics with Mencius. Syle and blind. His son Henry Winter Syle was blind.	532	
	<b>Rev. Henry Winter Syle.</b> Deaf-Mute Son of Rev. Edward W. Syle.	536	McC
1849, February 14- March 20.	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b> Burials and poverty. Discussed Christian resurrection. Distributed Gospel of St. Luke in Shanghai dialect. Translated by McClatchie. Baptism of Boys’ School scholar, Hong-Loo (Cantonese). Bishop, Syle and Spalding mark out ground-plan of Chinese mission church. Attends ceremonies at Temple of Confucius. Example of devotional form. Sacrifices described. Enquirer seeks conversion if given job security—a common occurrence. Rev. William Farmer of CMS returning to England for health reasons. March 11—Two years since Spalding embarked for China ex-Boston. Helping elderly blind men. Rejection of Buddhist priest who had pretended to seek baptism. Cotton merchant enquires-worships God of Wealth. Drunken man disturbs worship service.	536	
1849, March 3	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Boat journey seeking sick boy (consumption) from Boys’ School. Accompanied by Tsu [Chu] Kiung. Village mandarin investigates foreign visitor. Boy found and returns to school. Object of curiosity. Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting. Anglican/Episcopal meeting agrees to use only prayers common to English and American Prayer-Books. Supervision needed of builders of Chinese Mission Church (Christ Church). Meets Rev. Joseph Edkins—returns from recreation at “The Hills” — Kuling where he rented rooms in local temple but forced to leave. British Naval Mission to Loo-chow Islands (Okinawa). Dr. Bettelheim. Marriage of oldest scholar in Boys’ School. Shanghai Translation Committee. Continuing conflict over theos. Spalding’s health deteriorating. Sick boy mentioned above baptized. Miss Jones woman servant baptized. Chinese Mission Church delayed due to non-delivery of building materials.	541	
1849, March 24.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Effect of British Consulate embargo on customs until attackers of foreign missionaries caught and punished. Effect on tribute grain junks and crews. Some Chinese request missionaries to intercede with Consul. Enthusiasm for more day-schools.	545	

	Mixcreants on trial. Embargo on grain junks lifted by Consul.	
	Village of Woosung. Important foreign anchorage.	
	Opium ‘receiving’ ships.	
	Prevalence of opium “dens” at Shanghai.	
	Opium smokers. Professions of belief followed by petitions for employment.	
	European role in opium trade.	
	Aiding addicts with emetics.	
	Further reflection on free day-schools.	
	Visits City Temple.	
	Birth of Syle’s daughter.	
	New CMS Missionaries. Cobbold and Russell.	Chir
	Little Boy performing role of idol’ son.	
	Donation for church building received.	
	Poverty and religious interest of poor. Communion Alms.	
	Grumpy old woman—(long practice in complaining). Living conditions.	
	Grave mound in house complex. Preaching from grave mound.	
	Appeal for help from prisoner in city jail.	
	So-called courts of justice in China. Group punishments, corruption, etc.	
	One of many requests from Chinese for money to “return home.”	
1849, March 23— March 31	<b>Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</b>	553
	Elderly scholar responds to news about nephew embracing Christianity.	
	Elderly beggar women disturbs worship service.	
	Possible case of senile dementia.	
	Christian marriage of Chinese convert.	
	Preparation of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) for diaconate.	
1849, April.	<b>Lydia MARY Fay to Rev. Charles B. Dana, Alexandria VA.</b>	555
	Illness at Midway Academy.	
	Religious growth of another teacher.	
	Death of student’s father, a Baptist. Religious views of local elite.	
	Campbellites.	
	Funerals: “Going to see them put away!”	
	Donations from laity to support Virginia Episcopal Convention.	
1849, April 14.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	557
	Shanghai makers of “grave goods.”	
	Idol images—temple guardians.	
	Spalding “is very feeble.”	
	Problems in Canton.	
	Unrest in church services—no clear way of preaching and teaching.	
	Visit of USS Preble—carrying American sailors shipwrecked in Japan.	
	Ill-treatment by Japanese.	
	Hopes for Christian evangelism in Japan	
	Protestant missionaries visit Roman Catholic Hospice or missionary home.	
	Catholics avoid contact with Episcopal missionaries.	
	Itinerant visit to nearby town Sing Kea Loong, possibility of day-school.	
	Townfolk regard missionary as entertainment.	
	Preached in temple courtyard.	
	Visit of American warship—USS Plymouth.	
	Social gathering of American citizens in Shanghai.	
	Chinese officials visit ship. Mission school has good reputation.	
	Religious services on American warship.	
	Steam-powered British warship, HMS Fury arrives Shanghai.	
1849, May.	<b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone.</b>	560
	Visit of USS Preble. Captain Glynn from New Haven, Connecticut.	
	Familiar with Episcopal Mission.	

1849, May.	<p>Shipwrecked sailors caged for six months.  Visit of USS Plymouth, Captain Gedney, Commodore Geisinger.  Inspection of HMS Fury.</p>	561	Visi
	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  Chinese Hall of Great Benevolence, Shanghai. Burial of coffins.  Bishop Boone contributed to repair of local bridge.  Interest in Sing Kea Loong school effort get money from foreigners.  Bishop Boone confirms Niok Yung and woman Fok Chung.  Officers of USS Plymouth attend confirmation service.  Spalding ill. Death of: Mrs. Gutzlaff; Rev. William Farmer;  and Syle's Chinese language teacher.  Christ Church—Chinese mission church walls rising well.  Spalding's work taken up by Syle and others.  First Episcopal Holy Communion in Chinese.  Street preaching.  Chinese teacher at South Gate day-school seeks baptism.  Pressure of workload because of Spalding's continuing sickness.  McClatchie and Syle itineration in rural town.</p>		
1849, June 24 to July 11	<p><b>Rev Edward W. Syle.</b>  Nearly eighty Chinese receiving Communion Alms from McClatchie and  Syle. Several efforts to deceive missionaries noted.  Receipt of American newspapers.  Chinese spread rumours of American missionaries departure for home with  servants and scholars from Boys' School.  Real story is departure of Chinese for California goldfields.  Medical advice re Spaldin—home on ship with medical doctor.  Chinese rumours continue about departure of missionaries et al.  Pressure of mundane building etc a diversion from primary mission tasks.  Death of Chinese girl being cared for by Mrs. Syle.</p>	563	
1849, July 12.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b>  Private letter of apology to a Sunday School teacher re failure to respond  to offer to sponsor education of a Chinese boy.</p>	565	
1849, August 4.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  Death of daughter, Elizabeth.  Spalding sinking in health.  Bishop Boone's health improving.  Roof of Chinese mission church about to be completed.  Arrival of Rev. John Hobson, CMS.  Need of male superintendent for Boys' School.  Challenges of day-schools.</p>	566	
1849 July 31 to November 30.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  Donation from foreign resident for day-school. Teacher must recruit  students as in traditional Chinese schools.  Chinese boatmen seek higher wages through casual work.  Chinese parents want rewards for sending children to mission day-schools.  Chinese temple officer offers to be Syle's interpreter for monetary benefit.  Mrs. Syle has sedan chair accident but unhurt.  British merchants fined by Consul for avoiding travel restrictions.  Boatmen severely punished by Chinese authorities.  Punishing boatmen controls foreign travel.  Problems of reporting thefts of property from mission house.  Catholics attend Episcopal chapel  Spalding sick. Moved from old city of Shanghai to Hongkou.  Death of Chinese mission school teacher from malignant measles.</p>	568	

Protestant missionaries in Shanghai for health and recreation reasons.  
 No fees charged to parents of South Gate day-school students.  
 Observations about New Testament evangelism practices.  
 Communion Alms—another example of attempted fraud.  
 Pews on sale to meet costs of Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Holy Trinity Anglican Church becomes British Chaplaincy Church.  
     Minister appointed by Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs.  
     Spalding preached at Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Bishop Boone baptized Thomas Boone and Elizabeth Syle.  
 Shanghai Translation Committee.  
 Chinese pirate junks captured.  
 Chinese protests against unreasonable local taxes.  
 Destitute men from Keang-se relocated.  
 Widespread sickness among Protestant missionaries. Measles prevalent.  
 More about pirates, ships and punishments.  
 Enrolments at South Gate day-school increased (see above no fees)  
 Chinese respond politely to Syle's sermon.  
 Donation of \$10 for new day-school.  
 Destitute man seeks baptism for monetary benefit.  
 Rev. Josiah Goddard, American Baptist, moves from Bangkok to Shanghai.  
 Arrival of Rev. and Mrs. John Lowder, Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Women gambling in public. Death rituals described.  
 Arrival of Rev. Dr. and Mrs Charles Taylor, Methodist Episcopal Church.  
 Chinese and ancestors.  
     Flood exposes human bones from above ground  
     Chinese coffin. Many coffins not buried.  
     Problems of burials for poor families.  
 Contents of Chinese book of moral instructions. Duties to others.  
 Continuing sickness. Dr. Lockhart overworked.  
 Mixed-race boys—Irish/Chinese.  
 Catholic adherents-possible as members of religious order.  
 Mrs. Syle and Asian cholera.  
 Boatman drowned. Weighed down by copper cash.  
 Chinese concepts of prayer.  
 Bishop Boone baptized Tchu [Chu] Kiung of Boys' School.  
 Syle reports four Chinese day-schools in Shanghai.  
 Lowder conducts his first service at Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Episcopal/Anglican missionaries compare translations for a common version.  
 Shanghai Jubilee meeting at CMS house attended by English and Americans.  
 First service of Holy Communion at Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Spalding conducting services at his house in old city. Good language skills.  
 Disposal of bodies of beggars.  
 Third anniversary of Syle's arrival in Shanghai.  
 Poor Chinese reading skills.  
 Describes three stages of language acquisition by missionaries.  
     Successful acclimatisation to Shanghai.  
 Examples of children's faith at South Gate Day School.  
 Hongkou Chinese village. House pulled down because of adultery.  
**Miss Emma Jones** to Sunday School, St. Paul's Church, Philadelphia.  
 Children supporting boy in Boys' School—Neok Woo, or A-Woo age 16.  
 Uncle contracts boy to school for ten years.  
 Neok Woo awarded Bible for good behaviour.  
 Boy returns home-ill. Syle goes to recover him. (see above)  
 Neok Woo diagnosed with consumption-tuberculosis.  
 Neok Woo dies.  
 Chu-Kiang records last words of Neok Woo.

1849, August 20.

**Miss Emma Jones** to Sunday School, St. Paul's Church, Philadelphia.

576

1849, July 31 to November 30,	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Spalding embarks at Woosung to return to US. Survival doubtful. Spalding drowns at sea. Three Protestant missionaries dead. Lowrie, Pohlman, Spalding. Reflections—Disappointment at lack of support from home churches. Boys’ School encouraging. Death of A-Woo. Discussions with enquirers in old city of Shanghai church. Discussion of Chinese religion. Mr. and Mrs. Syle take holiday in Ningpo.	578
1849, October 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Illness of Spalding. Boone and family occupy new house at Hongkou. Calls for two female teachers and one male superintendent for Boys’ School.	580
1849, October 26.	<b>Unnamed American Correspondent</b> from Canton. Death of Spalding at sea when ship <i>Coquette</i> foundered. All lost. <sup>26</sup>	581
1849, October	<b>Foreign Missions Committee, New York,</b> Annual Report for 1849. Death of Spalding. Miss Morse to leave Shanghai for health reasons. Continuing ill-health of Bishop Boone. New School Buildings at Hongkou. Consecration of Christ Church in old city of Shanghai by Bishop Boone. Bishop Boone teaching in Boys’ School in place of Miss Morse. Mission Statistics. Need for Girls’ School. Shanghai Translation Committee Need for additional missionaries.	581
1849, November 15.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Urgent need for clergy for Shanghai. Boone and Syle only priests. <b>Miss Mary Morse returning to US.</b> <b>Miss Emma Jones working alone.</b> <b>Miss Caroline Tenney leaves US for Shanghai.</b> Baptism of Soo-dong. (48 years)—Syle’s first baptism. Chai (Huang Guangci) and Chu Kiung as sponsors. Mrs. Syle godmother. Other Chinese enquirers. Work demands may reduce correspondence.	585
1849, November 17.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> <b>Miss Morse</b> and Henry Boone travelling to US. Miss Morse has been self-supporting missionary for five years in Shanghai. Bishop Boone teaching in Boys’ School in place of Miss Morse. Forthcoming baptism of Chai’s brother will be sixth baptism for 1849. Additional missionaries urgently needed.	586
1849, November 17.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Health is reason for sending Henry Boone home. Need for proper schooling for Henry. Burden of missionary family separation of parents and children. <b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone pregnant.</b>	587
1849, November 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Reports loss of ship <i>Coquette</i> and death of Spalding.	588

---

26 “Samuel Hall, of East Boston, built the barque *Coquette*, 420 tons, commanded by Captain Oliver Eldridge. The *Coquette* sailed from Boston, June 29, 1844, was 76 days to Java Head, and 99 days to Canton. She was owned by Russell & Co., of China, and made several fast passages between Calcutta and ports in China.” see online 1 July 2013 at — [http://en.wikisource.org/wiki/The\\_Clipper\\_Ship\\_Era/Chapter\\_4](http://en.wikisource.org/wiki/The_Clipper_Ship_Era/Chapter_4)

	Confirms Spalding's diagnosis of tuberculosis. A very promising missionary, highly respected.		
1849, November 22.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay to Rev. Charles Backus, Alexandria VA.</b> Dislike of Rev. Temple's sermons. Holidays and Fay's erotic dream about Backus. Return to Midway Academy.	589	Spir
1849, November 30.	<b>Neok Toong to Miss Emma Jones.</b> Letter from scholar in Boys' School, aged c15 years. Seeks baptism.	592	
1849, December 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Syle baptises blind man—result of Spalding's ministry. Chai's brother baptized. Boys' School—"happiest spot in Shanghai." Urgent Need for Girls' School. Consecration of Christ Church in old city.	593	Enq
1849, December.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> New Chinese Mission Church, Christ Church Shanghai. Description.	594	
1849, December 23 to 1850, January 6.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Superstitious belief about life choices given by blind man. New Testament complete. Work to begin on Old Testament. Christmas present of umbrella to all blind recipients of Communion Alms. and children of South Gate day school. Tsu [Chu] kiung a promising student. More missionaries needed. Church Missionary Society Chinese mission church opened. Girls' School Opened.	597	Shai
1849, December.	<b>Rev. P. P. Irving.</b> Foreign Commission Circular to Young Men of Episcopal Church in USA.	599	Assi

## **Part 9 Shanghai, 1850-1851.**

**601-754**

1850, January 6.	<b>South Australian Register. Adelaide.</b> Opening of Christ church	602	
1850, February 9.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Fifth Annual Report (Read at Fifteenth Annual Meeting of Board of Missions. See below <b>1850. June 20.</b> Death of Rev. Phineas D. Spalding. <b>Miss Mary Morse returns to the United States.</b> Seven Chinese baptized-six adults, one child. Chinese service now held on third Sunday. American Episcopal Mission rents permanent pew at Holy Trinity Anglican Church. Statistics: Seven Chinese baptized-six adults, one child. Nine confirmed. Seven Chinese communicants. Burials, 2. Catechumens <sup>10. 27</sup> Consecration of Christ Church, Chinese Mission Church 6 January 1850. Reflects on Episcopal education in Java (students mixed race)	602	Firsi
1850, February.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett Bridgman.</b> Funeral of PEC Boys' School scholar	605	
1850, February 14.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Death of Spalding reported in <i>Chinese Repository</i> .	605	Dea
1850, February 12.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Boone's ill-health. Good housing at Hongkou. Boys's School. Male layman needed and "three very superior women." More clergy needed.	607	

27 Catechumens are people being prepared for Baptism.

1850, February 14.	<p>Mail costs 45 cents per quarter ounce weight.</p> <p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle. Letter to friends in the Church of England.</b></p> <p>Death of Rev. Phineas D. Spalding.</p> <p><b>Miss Mary Morse returns to the United States.</b></p> <p>Shanghai Translation Committee.</p> <p>Disagreement over <b>terms for God</b> in Chinese.</p> <p>Translating Bible into Chinese.</p>	607
1850, February 25 to March 5.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>Discussions at Christ Church in old city of Shanghai.</p> <p>Chinese boatmen sell goods stolen from wreck of “SS Formosa.”<sup>28</sup></p> <p>Working routine at Christ Church.</p> <p>Soodong in discussion with Chinese Catholic.</p> <p>American Southern Baptist mission church opened (3 March 1850).</p> <p>Christ Church crowded with beggars seeking aid.</p> <p>Chinese and foreign philanthropists establish free food kitchens.</p> <p>Friend in New Zealand asks for copies of “constitution and canons” of Episcopal Church as New Zealand Anglicans form a province.</p> <p>Baptism of Stephen Elliott Boone.</p> <p>Opening of Christ Church— Australian press reports.</p>	611
1850, March 8 to April 6.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>Distribution of Communion Alms to poor. Crowds seeking help.</p> <p>Baptism of Stephen Elliott Boone.</p> <p>Chinese refuge for poor—one thousand seeking help. than entitled to under salvage rules.</p> <p>Recipients of Communion Alms “behaving very badly.”</p> <p>Stealing church fencing. Difficult to maintain order.</p> <p>Thief caught near church.</p> <p>Officials announce beginning of reign of new Emperor.</p> <p>Communion at School Chapel.</p> <p>Public order. An official suggests that mission stops aiding poor in old city of Shanghai and move their aid point outside the city walls.</p> <p>Now two thousand at refuge.</p> <p>Missionaries now participating. New Testament to be printed.</p> <p><b>Terms for God</b> debate.</p> <p>Baptism of six Chinese in School Chapel including students supported by Episcopal parishes in America.</p> <p>Officials returning poor by boat to their own districts. Much loss of life.</p> <p>Two foreign Catholic priests.</p> <p><b>Miss Caroline Tenney arrives Shanghai on 2 August 1850.</b></p> <p><b>Impact of Steam ships in reducing travelling times to and from China.</b></p>	613
1850, April 15.	<p><b>Rev. Elijah Bridgman. ABCFM.</b></p> <p>Mrs. <b>Eliza Gillett Bridgman’s</b> Girls’ School. Wong Ka Modur [Wang-kia Ma-taw].</p> <p>An educational experiment.</p> <p>Recruitment by home visitation. 50 families visited.</p> <p>Students irregular. Parents fear removal of children to America.</p> <p>Attendances vary, 12—20</p> <p>Boarding school opened. 12 students. TOTAL c 40.</p> <p>Curriculum.</p> <p>Results. Effects in community.</p>	616
1850, April 15.] to July 4.	<p><b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett Bridgman.</b></p> <p>Girls’ School. Shanghai vernacular.</p>	621

28 See online 1 July 2013 at — <http://dougsinclairsarchives.com/briggs/formosa.htm>



Aim: To teach girls to read and write.  
Religious Instruction given by Chai [[Wong Kong Chai, Huang Guangci, Episcopal mission](#)].  
No English taught.

1850, April 11 to  
July 8.

**Rev. Edward W. Syle.**

625

Christian teaching on honouring parents [filial piety] explained.  
Moral standards of Chinese criticised.  
Chinese literacy.  
Examination of Chinese school students.  
Arrival of Rev. Frederick Foster Gough, CMS.  
Rice distribution to poor ends.  
Mrs. Bridgman (formerly Eliza Gillett) opens girls's day-school.  
Shanghai Translation Committee.  
Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci)—cannot be deaconed because  
Episcopal Church canons require signature of two American priests.  
Syle's son sick. Take holiday visit to Loonghua Pagoda. Distributes tracts.  
Eleven dead bodies on quay-side.  
Distinguishes residential and business suburbs of old Chinese city.  
Syle and McClatchie (CMS) most mission aid to blind.  
Blind less likely to deceive.  
Chinese believe that mission aid is given to poor to buy converts.  
Challenges of Protestant relationships with Chinese Catholics.  
Rev. F. F. Gough (CMS) leaves for Ningpo.  
Deceptive conduct of young Chinese educated by Presbyterians at Ningpo.  
Robberies from CMS mission church.  
Protestants disagree over [Terms for God](#)—Debate over Shin versus Elohim.  
Bishop Boone provides accommodation for American Presbyterians  
enroute to Ningpo.  
Syle affected by fever for first time. Malaria??  
Wong Kong Chai proving "useful." Mrs. Bridgman's school flourishing.  
Syle cares for sick orphan boy c 12 years old. Boy dies.  
Chinese man worshipper of Guan Yin.  
Thinks Christianity a better option for life after death.  
Girl of 16 brings blind grandfather.  
Thought feeding him some of her own flesh would cure him.  
Syle purchases ship's bell for Christ Church.  
Discussion with local Chinese Catholics.  
[Terms for God](#). Bishop Boone to publish pamphlet on rendering of God  
into Chinese.  
Syle teaching in Boys' School. Curriculum.  
5<sup>th</sup> day of 5<sup>th</sup> Month. Reptiles etc believed to hide between 11 am and 1 pm.  
Chinese spread rumours that HMS Reynard, steam-screw warship is lost.  
Soodong recovers from serious illness.  
[Terms for God](#). Medhurst published paper advancing different views to  
Bishop Boone on rendering of God into Chinese.  
[Terms for God](#). Rev. Dr. James Legge publishes on rendering of  
God into Chinese.  
Rumours of death and resurrection and death of old woman by Catholic  
missionaries.  
[Terms for God](#). British and Foreign Bible Society views.  
Mrs. Boone ill  
Instructions given to catechumens. Boone's Chinese Catechism.  
Disagreements among Chinese "parishioners."  
Wish to establish "Blind Refuge."  
Protestant missionaries visit and accommodated by Bishop Boone.

	<b>China. “Delegates Version”</b> — <b>Terms for God</b> . Shanghai Translation Committee— serious division.	633
1850, May 13.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> —Statistics of Episcopal Mission. Seven Chinese communicants. Thirteen catechumens	634
	<b>Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci)</b> —cannot be deaconed because Episcopal Church canons require signature of two American priests. Anglican priests signatures unacceptable. Appeal for funds for Girls’ School. Missionaries for China. <b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay appointed teacher in Boys’ School, Shanghai.</b>	
1850, May 13.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> . All missionaries well.	634
1850, June 20.	<b>PEC Board of Missions</b> . 15th Annual Meeting. Chinese church “an illustrious trophy of the cross.	634
1850, June 20.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> . 15th Annual Meeting.	635
1850, July 2.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . Letter to Episcopal Sunday School in United States.	638
1850, July 6.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay to Rev. Charles Backus, Alexandria VA.</b> Reference for missionary service.	639
1850, July 12 to September 13	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . Protestant Missionaries receive hospitality during visits to Shanghai. Miss Emma Jones cares for young girl. Collapse of roof beam of Holy Trinity Anglican Church. <b>Miss Caroline Tenney arrives in Hong Kong.</b> Chai Kong Wong (Haung Guangci) rejects secular employment. Discussions with catechumens. Shanghai Translation Committee ends New Testament work after three years and one month. <b>Miss Caroline Tenney arrives in Shanghai.</b> Christ Church Pastoral visits and discussions. Examination at Boys’ School by Bishop Boone. Death of blind man. Birth of Syle’s son—Walter Meade Syle.. Bishop Boone seriously ill. Possible baptism of first child of Chinese Christian parents. Terms for God publishing issue recurs.	640
1850, July 31.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . <b>Terms for God</b> . Shanghai Translation Committee-Delegates Bible. <b>Terms for God</b> debate. General Committee of Protestant Missionaries Assembled at Shanghai. British prefer Shangti. Americans prefer Shin.	646
1850, August.	<b>Mr. John T. Points</b> appointed lay superintendent of Boys’ School.	650
1850, August 9.	Bishop Boone. <b>Terms for God</b> debate.	652
1850, September 6.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . Brief note about Boys’ School.	653
1850, September 12.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . Death of Spalding. Reflections of the Missionary. Incidents in the Mission School. Christ Church, Discussions. Mrs. Syle’s health. Recreational visit to Ningpo.	653
1850, September to October.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> . Glad to hear of appointment of <b>Miss Fay</b> . Continuing staff problems outlined.	655

	Importance of female missionaries.	
	Visit of Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.	
	Joint Prayer Book Proposal.	
	Problems with Communion and Burial services.	
1850, October 21.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay</b> to Rev. Charles Dana, Alexandria, VA.	656
1850, November 3.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	
	<b>Miss Mary Morse</b> returns to China.	656
1850, November 11.	<b>Miss Caroline Terrey.</b>	658
	American Episcopal women to finance Girls' School.	
1850, November 13.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	658
	General items. <b>Miss Jones</b> ill. Appointment of <b>Miss Fay</b> . More baptisms.	
	Contribution of Mr. David Olyphant, merchant of New York.	
	English Anglican layman Mr. James Summers assists with Boys' School.	
	Episcopal missionaries meet Anglican Bishop George Smith of Hong Kong.	
	Man seeks Christian instruction.	
	Responsible for buying and selling children.	
	Poor seek medical assistance from Syle.	
	Attended service at Holy Trinity Anglican Church led by Bishop Smith.	
	Protestant missionaries monthly meeting.	
	Bishop Boone's respect for Chinese values.	
	Boone urges immediate start of Girls' School.	
	Protestant missionaries retreat to sanatorium in "The Hills."	
1850, December.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> to establish Girls' School.	661
	Seeking male layman to superintend Boys' School.	
1850, December 19.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	661
	Responds to complaint that missionary letters and reports are "wanting in interest."	
	Bishop Boone reissues pamphlet on <b>Terms for God</b> debate.	
	Boys' School involves Bishop Boone, Syle, Summers and Miss Tenney.	
	South Gate day-school neglected but still open.	
	Christ Church discussions proceeding well.	
	Visits Chinese city every morning.	
	Mrs. Bridgman's school.	
	Itineration in countryside.	
	Swedish missionary murdered near Foochow (Fuzhou).	
	Protestant missionaries visit Soochow with no problems.	
1850, December 20.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> General News.	665
	Girls' School an "imperative necessity." Funds needed—\$3000.	
1850, December 25.	<b>Rev. Robert</b> and <b>Mrs. Nelson</b> and <b>Mr. John T. Points</b> arrive in Shanghai.	666
	Points is Mrs. Nelson's brother.	
1851, January 16.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	666
	Serious illness of Bishop and Mrs. Boone.	
	Syle plans to widely distributed copies of Shanghai dialect version of St Matthew's Gospel. Copy has image of Christ Church inside cover.	
	Use of Bishop Boone's book: Catechism, Creed and Ten Commandments. <sup>29</sup>	
	Many contacts and discussions at Christ Church—Encouraging responses.	
1851, January 17.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	668
	<b>Miss Tenney</b> "most efficient."	
	Care for the blind.	
	Appeal for Girls' School. Half of funds needed subscribed.	
1851, February 9.	<b>Mrs. Boone</b> to sister <b>Harriet.</b>	668
	Eclipse on New Year's Day.	
	<b>Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci)</b> engaged to be married.	
	Bishop Boone endures suffering cheerfully.	

29 This book, in Chinese, printed in Shanghai, is listed in Worldcat but no actual copy can be located.

- 1851, February 14. **Bishop Boone**, 6th Annual Report. 669  
 Division of labour with Syle.  
 Mission Statistics. 19 Communicants.  
 Chai can be ordained. “Two presbyters” may include Anglican priests.  
 Boys’ School. Need of male superintendent.  
**Boys’ School. Work of Miss Jones invaluable**  
**Miss Jones cares for five Chinese girls.**  
**Miss Parkes, English lady, assisted in Boys’ School.**  
**Arrival of Miss Caroline Phebe Tenney**  
 Boys’ School. Mr. James Summers, former assistant at  
 St. Paul’s College, Hong Kong, temporary appointment.  
 Girls’s School to commence with arrival of Miss Morse and Miss Facy.  
**Episcopal Jurisdiction**  
 PEC Board of Missions. Relations with Diocese of Victoria.  
 Bishop Boone’s Suggestions.  
 Response of Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.  
 Shanghai Translation Committee. New Testament in two editions.  
 Boys’ School. List of Scholars and Patrons at February 14, 1851,
- 1851, February 14. **Bishop Boone**. 672  
 Division of clergy labor.  
 Bishop focuses on School Chapel at Hongkou.  
 Syle at Christ Church, Chinese mission church in old city.  
**AMERICAN CHURCH MISSION, SHANGHAI-BOYS’ SCHOOL**  
 Enrolments. 673
- 1851, February 27. **Bishop Boone**. 674  
 Shanghai Translation Committee.  
**Terms for God** debate.  
 Withdrawal of Medhurst and Milne.  
 McClatchie elected as replacement.  
 Medhurst and Milne form another Committee to translate Old Testament.
- 1851, March 15. **Rev Edward W. Syle**. 675  
 Bishop Boone’s illness.  
**Terms for God** debate. Reissue of Bishop’s defence of Shin.  
 Older scholars approaching marriage age.  
 Bishop Boone insists no scholar may marry.  
 Choo [Chu] Kiung leaves to visit sick father.  
 Two Communicant members suspended for adultery.  
 Unrepentant female.  
 Man visits Bishop but more concerned about work than repentance.  
 Syle receives and visits Chinese Catholics.  
 Syle visits to Chinese Temples.  
 Importance of itineration.  
 Rev. John Hobson (CMS) accepts appointment as British Chaplain  
 in Shanghai and minister of Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Shanghai Translation Committee.  
 Total withdrawal of London Missionary Society (LMS).  
 New LMS Chinese mission church opened in Shanghai.
- 1851, April 13. **Rev. Edward W. Syle**. 677  
 Rev. Thomas McClatchie assisting Syle at Christ Church.  
 Shanghai Translation Committee—Boone chairman.  
 Syle replaces Boone teaching senior class in Boys’ School.  
 Weekly services and program at Christ Church.  
 Reference to Jesus in Chinese performance at shrine near Christ Church.  
 Syle action to recover a boy removed from mission school by Catholic priest.  
 Day-schools continue but without missionary supervision.  
 Local unrest—bands of armed men in conflict.

1851, April 14.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	679	Ter
1851, April 19.	<b>Rev. Dr. William Sparrow to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	681	
	Re Susan Sparrow, later Mrs. D. D. Smith, PEC Missionary, China.		
1851, May 5.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	680	Dep
	Mr. John T. Points from US.		
	Points is Mrs. Nelson's brother and will be Superintendent of Boys' School.		
1851, May 30 and June 4.	<b>Bishop Boone and Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	681	
	Boone on sick leave with family and Miss Jones.		
	Boone finalises purchase of land for Girls's School at Hongkou.		
	Total subscriptions over \$4200.		
	More than half from Diocese of Virginia.		
1851, June	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	682	
	Missionary arrivals.		
	<b>Miss Morse, Caroline Phebe Tenney, Lydia Mary Fay, Rev. and Mrs. Robert Nelson.</b>		
	Rev. Walter Lowrie comments on importance of episcopal authority in overcoming objections of male missionaries to single female missionaries.		
1851, June.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	684	Mee
	Rev. Dr. Walter Medhurst, "grandfather of all missionaries."		
	<b>Terms for God</b> controversy.		
	Foreigners "outside" the missionary circle. Diplomats, consuls and merchants. Role of American merchants as consuls.		
1851, June 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	684	
	Boys' School—Syle in charge—50 boys enrolled.		
	Christ Church. Baptism of aged man.		
	New stone font.		
1851, June 16.	<b>Rev. James W. Cooke, Foreign Missions Committee Correspondence.</b>	684	
	Bishop Boone baptizes William Meade Syle.		
	Caution in accepting Chinese candidates for baptism.		
	Ordination of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) to diaconate.		
	General Convention of PEC removes requirement for two PEC Priests to endorse ordination certificate.		
	Chae examines candidate for baptism.		
	Roman Catholics in China.		
	Discipline applied to two Chinese Episcopal Christians.		
	Man claims Catholics offering to accept him.		
	Syle receives visits from Catholics.		
	Syle visits Temple of God of Thunder.		
	Discussion with Buddhist priest.		
	Soodong discusses worship of Mary with Catholic book copyist.		
	<b>Terms for God</b> debate—the "Shin" question-Boone's pamphlet.		
	Continuing disagreement among Protestant missionaries.		
	Visit of Bishop of Victoria to Shanghai.		
	Missionaries overloaded, extra missionaries needed.		
	<b>Appointment of Lydia MARY Fay noted.</b>		
	Continuing ill-health of Bishop Boone		
	Boys' School— <b>Miss Tenney</b> , Mr. Summers		
	Openness of country people to Christian teaching—"Delightful."		
	Syle visits Catholic Chapel. Distributes books to local Chinese.		
	Syle visits Temple of Confucius with Rev. John Hobson (CMS).		
	Describes ceremony conducted by official.		
	Millennarian implications.		
	Chinese Christian Tracts sent to California.		
1851, June.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	691	
	Girls' School appeal for funds.		

1851, June.	<b>PEC Board of Missions</b> — 16th Annual Meeting.	692	
1851, June 24.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> — Annual Report. Items repeated from 1851, February 3, Rev. Edward W. Syle. Remarkable progress of Protestant Missions. New missionaries. Rev. Robert Nelson, Mr. John T. Points, Rev. Cleveland Keith Call for twenty presbyters for China mission. Women more ready to serve as missionaries than men. Boys' School has produced more conversions than other Protestant mission schools. Bishop Boone credits this to quality of women teachers/ (Note—insistence on a male superintendent.)	692	List
	<b>Women missionaries.</b> Syle 's account of Christ Church, Chinese Mission Church, old Shanghai. Syle—old city of Shanghai. Syle—interior of Christ Church. Syle—program at Christ Church. Insertion of image of Christ Church and invitation to attend placed in copies of Scriptures and tracts. Boys' School. John T. Points appointed superintendent. Impact of English language learning on scholars. Mr. James Summers of Hong Kong appointed temporary teacher. South Gate day-school Miss Parkes, an Anglican lady, appointed temporary teacher. Chinese baptized by Bishop Boone. Girls' School. Miss Jones in charge. Scholars in Boy's School of betrothal/marriage age—importance of Girls' School. Importance of keeping sexes separate. Americans asked to provide scholarships for Chinese girls. Missionary labours reviewed.		
1851, July 1.	Rev. Edward W. Syle. Sickness in Boys' School. Baptisms in school and three aged men. <b>Caroline Jones</b> on leave in Ningpo.	713	
1851, July 2.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Meeting with Learners and Inquirers. Few repeat attendances. Retention of names on 'parish roll.' Boys' School-Examinations Summers engagement terminated July 4. Staffing problems restrict student progress. Activities of Wong Kong Chai [Huang Guangci] and Soolong [Soodong-Yang-Soo-Dong]. Boys' School—Rearrangement of teaching responsibilities. Soodong—Candidate for Holy Orders [Ordination] First Examination—Gospel of St. Matthew (English and Shanghainese) Catechism and Creed. Alarms and Superstitions of the People— Rumours among Chinese. Appearance of blood in street, firing of ship's guns in harbour indicate war imminent. French National Ship <i>Capriceieuse</i> and other foreign warships source of rumours spread by Fokien {Fujian} gangs about construction of foreign fortifications. Syle drafts History of the Episcopal Mission. Conversation with Catholic about authority of Scripture.	713	

	<b>Kaifeng Jewish Mss purchased.</b> Copies sent to Foreign Missions Committee	
	Mail from home.	
	Boys' School—Examination of Chinese learning.	
	Syle's seventh year of ordained ministry. Challenge of leadership.	
	Recreational visit by boat to Woosung and return (fourteen miles).	
	Inflammatory Placards—Actions of the Chinese Authorities.	
	Posted by Fujian gangs.	
	Removed by Chinese authorities.	
	Imperial Manifesto.	
	Rebuke calling for respect for superiors.	
	Illness—apparently malaria.	
	<b>Death of Stephen Elliott (Ellie) Boone. (20 months old).</b>	
	July and August hot months and regarded as very dangerous.	
	Buried British Cemetery near Elizabeth Syle.	
	Funeral conducted by Rev. Thomas McClatchie (CMS)	
1851, July 2.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> (continued).	718
	Boys' School. Syle rejects use of Catholic books.	
	Girls' School. Land purchased and ground plan marked out.	
	Problems in making translations from the Prayer Book—Ordination of Deacons	
	Visitors and Inquirers.	
	Storms and Flood.	
	Chi's (Huang Guangci) examined for ordination.	
	Syle assisted by Rev. Thomas McClatchie (CMS), English priest.	
	Requirement for two priests (in Anglican/Episcopal orders)	
	Wong Kong Chai declines secular employment.	
	South Gate day-school now under Chai's supervision.	
	Endorsement of Chai by Rev. Dr. and Mrs. Bridgman.	
	Syle leads services at School Chapel.	
1851, August.	<b>Mrs. Phoebe Boone to sister Hetty.</b>	721
	Mrs. Boone reflects on secular versus spiritual matters in daily life.	
	William Boone Jr (Willie) encourages mother.	
1851, August 15.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett-Bridgman.</b>	721
1851, August to September.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	722
	General news of mission staff.	
	Dedication of Chai (Huang Guangci) , the Candidate for the Diaconate.	
	Soodong received as candidate for te Diaconate.	
	Girls' School building commenced.	
	Accommodation at front, classrooms at rear.	
	Mission requests for special donations (e.g., schools) over and above ordinary resources of Foreign Missions Committee.	
	Prospects of China Mission good but more clergy needed.	
1851, September 1.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	724
	<b>Ordination of Chi, (Wong Kong Chai—Huang Guangci).</b>	
	McClatchie assists.	
	Three candidates for Holy Orders—Mr. John T. Points, Soodong, Chu Kiung.	
	Syle calls for more ordinands from US.	
1851, September.	<b>Mrs. Eliza Gillett-Bridgman.</b>	728
	<b>Ordination of Chi, (Wong Kong Chai—Huang Guangci).</b>	
18511851, September 7.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> Annual Report	729
	Three candidates for Holy Orders—Mr. John T. Points, Soodong, Chu Kiung.	
	Syle calls for more ordinands from US.	
	Rev. Cleveland Keith. Background in Virginia Seminary.	
	Recommendation for Chu Kiung signed by Syle and Rev. Robert Nelson.	
	Girls's School. Building completed. Cost so far \$4,793.	
	\$2653 from Diocese of Virginia.	

1851, September 9.	<p>Boone to take leave in the United States.  <b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  The Bishop's Health. Three hour service.  First celebration of Holy Communion in Mission Church (Hongkou).  <b>Miss Caroline Tenney's account of the ordination of Wong.</b>  Ladies in gallery.  "Goblet" pulpit.</p>	732	
1851, October 1.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  Accompanied by Henry Syle (son).  Henry writes to his mother.  Gutzlaff's Island, Silver Island. Role in Opium Trade.  Syle's first sight of "ice" houses, used to store winter ice for summer sale.  Site of Ningpo City.  Three days to travel 120 miles.  Mission Schools and missionary friends.  Church Missionary Society.  Belief in anti-foreign policy of new Emperor.  Visits to Protestant missionary schools.  Romanization of local dialect.  Ningpo congregations more restive than Shanghai.  Presbyterian Printing works uses metal type cast in Paris.      French type made of component parts of each character.      English and German Chinese type comprises entire character.  Native Foundling Hospital.  Mohammedan Mosque, Ningpo.  Muslims holding office and ceremonies.  Need to maintain distinction between Protestant and Catholic Christianity.  Chinese free-school—neglect of popular education by literati.  Minutes of Ningpo Missionary Association inspected.  Ningpo missionaries agree with Boone's preference for "shin."  Anglican (CMS) school.  Visits Presbyterian School. Instruction in Chinese. Romanization?  Visits Miss Aldersey's Girls' School.  Chinese Preacher at a Baptist chapel.  CMS school attends closed service. Shanghai all services open.  More upper-class people attend Christian services in Ningpo.  Slow foreign mail service between Shanghai and Ningpo.  Chinese postal service takes two weeks.  When foreign mail accepted by Chinese, charges 5 times more expensive.  Visits high quality furniture factory but manufacturing in decline.  Local tourism. Visit to Buddhist temple. Priest shows relic.</p>	734	Rec:
1851, October 5.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b>  Girls' School Building commenced.  Ordination of Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).</p>	744	Syle
1851, October 16.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>  Visit to Presbyterian Girls' School.  Need to overcome "inanity of mind" and vulgarity of Chinese women.  Visit to Chinese restaurant.  Visit to Xuedou Temple.  Return of foreign mail from Shanghai—fifteen day turnaround.  Revisits missionary chapels.  Meets Rev. W. A. P. Martin. Discussed Romanization.  Visits Lookong and Sacred Island of Pootoo.  Catholics building Orphan Asylum and Hospital.  Consecration of new Catholic Bishop.  Visits Protestant mission churches.</p>	744	



1851, November 1.	<p>Return to Shanghai.</p> <p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>Infanticide.</p> <p>Resumes usual Sunday routine of services and discussions.</p> <p>Syle and Miss Jones interview family of prospective Chinese bride.</p> <p>Bishop Boone and Syle select 4000 characters in most common use.</p> <p>Sixth anniversary of Syle's arrival in Shanghai.</p> <p>Death of Mrs. Henrietta Shuck.</p> <p>Chinese coffins broken—wood stolen for fuel.</p>	748	Shai
1851, December 1.	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>Syllabic classification of local dialect.</p> <p>Monthly meeting of Protestant missionaries.</p> <p>Discussion with Chinese merchants about Japan.</p> <p>Employs destitute Chinese Catholic in copying a tract.</p> <p>Clearing of Chinese buildings near Christ Church.</p> <p>Building of house for Soodong at Christ Church.</p> <p>Formal Chinese name now used for Deacon Wong Kong Chai— Wong Seen Sang—Huang Guangci. [Huang Xiānshēng 先生]</p> <p>Girls' School building proceeding.</p> <p>Indication of Pacific-wide trade—Ship from New Zealand with three Anglican clergyman “tourists.”</p> <p>Syle sees South Pacific as centre of “great Anglo-Australian empire.”</p> <p>New Zealand produce available in Shanghai.</p> <p>Reports news of creation of Australian Board of Missions (ABM).</p> <p>Creation of a New Zealand Anglican Province.</p> <p>Chinese officials return overdue American seamen to their ships.</p> <p>Syle sends books on China to New Zealand.</p> <p>Syle's pastoral duties discussed.</p> <p>“Shin” and “Shang-te” discussed with elderly Chinese man.</p> <p>Boys' School_two boys “sent away” from school for “invincible dullness.”</p> <p>Beginning of Episcopal Orphan Asylum under Soodong.</p> <p>Arrival of Rev. Robert and Mrs. Nelson and son Jemmy.<sup>30</sup></p> <p>End of year Holy Communion service.</p> <p>Syle, Points and Keith attend Christ Church.</p> <p>Girls' School. Miss Jones and eight scholars move into new building.</p>	750	
1851, December 18.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <p>Boys' School. First group complete their ten year commitment.</p> <p>Letter from Chu (Choo, Tchu) Kiung.</p>	754	
<b>Part 10 Shanghai, 1852-1854.</b>		<b>757-894</b>	
1852, January 22.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee—Intelligence.</b></p> <p>Nelsons, Keith and Potts arrived December 25, 1851.</p> <p>Girls' School occupied. Expansion to forty girls.</p> <p>Boys' School expanded to sixty boys.</p> <p>Chu Kiung accepted as candidate for ordination.</p> <p>Increased demand for financial resources to China.</p>	758	
1852, January 22.	<p><b>Rev. Robert and Mrs. Nelson.</b></p> <p>First impressions of Shanghai.</p> <p>An ice-house filled.</p> <p>Filth, beggary, crime, evidences of heathenism.</p> <p>Density of population. Freedom of access by missionaries.</p> <p>Sunday evening service at Syle's home only English service other than Holy Communion.</p> <p>Ample funds to increase scholars in boys' and girls' schools but no teachers.</p>	759	

---

30 Another form of Jimmy, abbreviation for James.

1852, January and February.	<p>Chinese poor have no day of rest but are “the most cheerful people.”</p> <p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>Protestant missionary prayer meeting at Rev. John Hobson’s home.  Pastoral work and challenges.  Arrival of letters from US.  Chinese females irregular at public services. Galleries reserved for women.  Visit to Wong house. Boy of thirteen and old man of eighty succeed at district examinations.  First American wedding in Shanghai. Now nineteen American families.  Dr. Bridgman’s health failing.  British warship on anti-piracy patrol.  Syle introduces Soodong to Rev. Cleveland Keith.  Syle encourages Soodong to apply for diaconate.  Syle instructs Points in Chinese.  Episcopal procedure for recommending Soodong for diaconate, in Chinese.  American merchant offers Dr. Bridgman free passage to US.  Boys’ School, Examination in English studies.  “Boys become bewildered when they are asked to think while studying.”  Presbyterian school at Ningpo demands explanation of meaning of Chinese texts.  Bishop Boone urged to take recreational leave in Ningpo.  Dr. and Mrs. Bridgman agrees to take Henry Syle to US.  Mrs. Boone and children to accompany Bridgman’s to US.  Mrs. Taylor and children (Meth. Episcopal) also to return to US.  Inquirer who saw invitation inside cover of mission tract.  Inquirer asked for two clean bottles (i.e., a reward).  Syle conducts Protestant Missionary prayer meeting.  Farewell to Henry Syle.  Family sorrow at parting.  Pastoral visits and discussions.  Bishop Boone and Syle visit day-schools in old city. Sixteen scholars each.  Visit of Episcopal minister from US. (Washburn of Newburyport Mass.)  Prepares Soodong’s Testimonials for ordination. (Three years of study.)  Syle, Washburn visit Taoist temple.  Boys’ School vacation.  Visit to Wong House. <b>Miss Fay</b> there when Syle arrives.  Protestant missionaries discuss corporate protest over opium trade.  Chinese New Year. Syle and Points visit Wong house.  Syle sends Gospels, Tracts and printing blocks to Rev. F. McDougall of  Episcopal mission in Borneo for use among Chinese diaspora.  Dr. Lockhart urges Syle to recreational voyage.  Mrs. Syle gives birth to another boy.  Bishop Boone to join family in US.</p>	760	Solv
1852, February 11.	<p><b>Bishop Boone</b> to Bishop Meade, Maryland.</p> <p>Mrs. Boone and children in US.  Mrs. Nelson housekeeping for Bishop Boone.  Girls’s School, progress report and thanks for contributions.  Chinese candidates for ordination—Soodong and Chu Kiung.</p>	766	Tha
1852, March 1,	<p><b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b></p> <p>New building for Episcopal Mission at Hongkou.  Revised list of “pensioners.”  Bishop Boone’s Health—Dangerous Attack.  Mr. John T. Points accepted as candidate for ordination.  First American trading vessel with Hawaiian flag.  Bishop Boone instructions— Study Programs for Chinese ordinands.</p>	767	

- Soodong's course of study—in Chinese with Syle.  
 Chu Kiung's studies—with Nelson.  
 WongKong Chai (Huang Guangci) with Keith.  
 New day-school for boys in nearby village supported by Syle and Points.  
 New day-school for girls supported by **Miss Jones**.
- 1852, March 15, **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 770  
 Reiterates need for missionary doctor.  
 Attempts to place Boys' School English-speaking graduate  
 Kwong Chung, (brother of Wong Kong Chai-Huang Guangci)  
 —refused employment by foreign merchants.  
 Church Missionary Society Boys' School to teach only in Chinese.  
 Mrs. Nelson caring for severely burnt Chinese girl.  
 Need for missionary doctor.  
 Foreign Catholic merchant supports Boys' School.  
 American Methodist Episcopal Missionary reports inland journey in Chinese  
 costume but attacked by crowd.  
 Kwong Chung (brother of Wong Kong Chai-Huang Guangci) employed  
 as colporteur.  
 Soodong's kindness to elderly blind man makes impression on man who  
 gives an account of his life and circumstances.  
 The young scholar (see above p. 706) returns Syle's visit.  
 Nelson's Chinese teacher employed as Temple of Heaven—  
*Reader of the Imperial Homilies*.  
 Chinese signing language and dumb woman.  
 Religion as a means of obtaining a livelihood.  
 Common to some Buddhist and Daoist priests.  
 Kwong Chung (brother of Wong Kong Chai-Huang Guangci) reports on  
 work as a colporteur.
- 852, April 13. **Rev. Cleveland Keith.** 774  
 Principal work is learning Shanghai dialect.  
 Instructing Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) in Epistle to Romans.  
 Conducted English language services for Episcopal and CMS congregations.  
 Studying the customs of the Chinese—visits to temples with Points.  
 Describes New Year ceremonies at City God Temple.  
 Describes 'kow-towing.'  
 Visits Buddhist temple with nine "colossal statues."  
 Observes sacrifices at Temple of Confucius.
- 1852, April 15. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 775  
 Impressed by "air of cheerfulness, happiness and comfort" of mission.  
**Mrs. Nelson** "suffered" during voyage.  
 Newcomers make calls on predecessors.  
 Study of Chinese first priority.  
 Culture shock.  
 People accessible to missionaries.  
 Comments on missions, methodologies and measuring achievements.  
 Episcopal method centres on preaching and teaching.  
 Boys' School—influence of a graduate in secular employment.  
 Girls' School. **Miss Jones**.  
 Conducts Bible Study for English-speaking Chinese boys.
- 1852, April 15. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 777  
 A summary of Syle's reports.  
 Candidates for Ordination.
- 1852, July 4. **Rev. John Hobson, Church Missionary Society School.** 780  
 Trade-training part of curriculum.  
 Tailoring, Shoe-making, Seal and Block-cutting, etc.

1852, June 18 to  
July 30.

**Rev. Edward W. Syle.**

781

Baptism of abandoned wife.  
Celebration of Jubilee of English Society for the Propagation of the Gospel.  
Episcopal Mission in Borneo—39 baptisms.  
Chinese leave Borneo for California  
Need of a missionary physician and hospital.  
American seamen constant source of trouble in Shanghai.  
Religious teaching must be carried on in the local dialect.  
Employment of Chinese doctor by Syle.  
Oppressive weather. **Miss Fay** ill.  
Reduction of Syle's responsibilities improves efficiency.  
Re-opening village day-school.  
Pastoral visits.  
Nelson and Syle visit Buddhist priest seeking baptism while teaching  
in local temple.  
Old woman comments on forgetfulness of old age (dementia?)  
Chinese family conflict over Catholic connections.  
Kwong Chung (brother of Wong Kong Chai-Huang Guangci) now employed  
by American business.  
Syle has baptized total of twelve Chinese but some "falling away."  
Syle declines offer from a Chinese doctor to provide medical services one  
day a week at Christ Church.  
Illness of Dr. Burton, American Baptist, who has helped opium addicts.  
Soodong an effective teacher of religion.  
Manufacture of tea chests.  
Fifty foreign children living in Shanghai. Risks to health?  
Arrival of USS Plymouth.  
Boys' School. Former student now teaching English privately.  
Chinese anxious to learn English.  
Average attendance at Christ Church rarely exceeds one hundred.  
Shanghai region in severe drought.  
Observations about Daoism—Taouism.  
Syle's pensioners also seek alms from Dr. Lockhart and  
Rev. Thomas McClatchie. "We find ourselves constantly  
liable to be imposed upon."  
Friendly contacts with well-informed Italian Catholic priest.

1852, July 17.

**Rev. Robert Nelson.**

788

Catechising as means of improving language skills.  
Nelson and Points itinerate assisted by two boys from school.  
Purchasing temple idols.  
Chinese women teaching children to worship idols.

1852, July 23.

**Rev. Cleveland Keith.**

789

Insti

Notes on learning Chinese.

1852, July 28.

**Rev. Cleveland Keith.** Description of China Mission at Shanghai.

792

A private letter to the Editor of the *Southern Churchman*.

1852, August 2.

**Bishop Boone. Terms for God debate,**

794

1852, August 6.

**Foreign Missions Committee.**

794

Boone to take leave in US.

Syle needs urgent leave.

Nelson and Points making good progress with Chinese language studies.

1852, August 1-31.

**Rev. Edward W. Syle.**

795

Rep

because of drought. Magistrate injured by protesting mob.

Concerns about health of children and himself.

Rev. Thomas McClatchie publication in Chinese—*Differences Between  
True and False Religion* enjoyed by Soodong.

	Books and tracts have little impact on Chinese. Illness in Syle family. All foreigners affected by “hot season” — July-August. Nelson leads church prayers in Chinese for the first time-reading from Chinese text of Book of Common Prayer. Visits to day-schools. Six in operation. Nelson conducted service at Christ Church. Soodong comments on Christian doctrine of unity of soul contrasted with Chinese belief in three souls and six spirits. Chinese tailors working for foreigners meet to form trade association. Concept of patron saints of tradesmen discussed. Nelson preaches first sermon in Chinese. New Presbyterian missionaries. Illness.			
1852, September.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Working on Shanghai dialect version of the Acts of the Apostles. Saviour.” Increasing complexity of regional identities in Shanghai. Historical importance of regional or district guilds and guild-halls. Guilds provide coffin-sheds until relatives can return dead home. Syle family illnesses. Family to return to US, Syle to stay in Shanghai. Five Chinese confirmed. Twenty-four Chinese communicants but seven Syle to take leave in US in early 1853. Bishop Boone and Chu-Kiang to go to US. More Catholic discussions. Holy Communion celebrated in Miss Fay’s room due to her illhealth. Bishop Boone establishes a provisional committee to administer mission during his absence, i.e., Syle, Nelson, Keith, (presbyters).	799	Con	
1852, September.	<b>Miss Lydia MARY Fay.</b> Now two years in China. Boys’ School. “Maternal care” of school divided between Tenney and Fay. Four months of continuous illhealth. Continues teaching from her sickbed.	804		susp
1852, October 23.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Delay in departure of Bishop Boone. Syle (Chairman); Nelson (Secretary); Keith. Points as Treasurer. Nelson in charge of day-school and preaching place at Wong Ka Mo-Dur. <b>Miss Fay ill.</b>	804		
1852, October 31.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Bishop Boone and Chi Kiung arrived in New York 30 January 1852. Administrative matters after Bishop Boone’s departure. Chinese annoyed by missionary condemnation of idols. Syle mentions Taiping Rebellion in Kwang-se Province and rebel march on Nankin. Return to Wang Ka Mo-cur. Points seeks to assist badly burnt Chinese man. Arrival of Rev. and Mrs. Cunningham (Methodist Episcopal Church, South). Rev. Frederick Foster Gough, Church Missionary Society, Ningpo, to England after health breakdown. Protestant Missionary Association formed. (15 members). Miss Catherine Jones sails for Shanghai. Rev. J. P. Hubbard withdraws application as missionary for China.	805		
1852, November.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting. New Chinese Temple dedicated to the inventor of wine. Methodist Episcopal missionaries, Rev. and Mrs Benjamin Jenkins to US.	807		A C

- Chinese believe in demonic possession.
- Chinese family cure opium addict by isolation.
- Discussions of “Chaos.”
- Suffering of Rev. and Mrs. John Byers, American Presbyterians.
- Missionary children and “unchristian” Chinese language.
- Contribution of Chinese ministers.
- Chinese question about the name of God.
- Need for Chinese language theological works for non-English speaking candidates for ordination.
- Casual enquirer turned murderer with history of buying and selling children
- Miss Fay** confined to her bedroom.
- 1852, December. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 811
- Survey of everyday work. Teaching in Shanghai dialect.
- Death of wife of British Consular officer, Mrs. Hale.
- Protestant Missionary Association.
- Chinese Catholic offers to buy a job with Nelson.
- Another request for travelling expenses.
- 1852, December. **Rev. Cleveland Keith.** 812
- General duties.
- Unscheduled visits by Syle, Nelson and Keith to all day-schools. Instruction in Shanghai dialect.
- BOYS—Wong Ku Mo-dur; Lee Oong K’u; outside little South Gate; inside Great South Gate; near Christ Church; Law Zak;
- GIRLS—one school.
- Schools “most rapid and efficient way” of youth evangelism.
- 1852, December. **Mr. John T. Points.** 813
- Completed first year as missionary teacher.
- Boys’ School.
- 50 boys enrolled.
- Senior class—16 boys—Mr. Points. Need for rigorous discipline. One boy dismissed and four ran away. Now 11 scholars.
- Middle class—17 boys—**Miss Fay**. One boy dismissed, two ran away, one long-term absence due to sickness. Now 13 scholars.
- Junior Class—21 boys—**Miss Tenney**. All new enrollments. Number varied up to 26 boys—some dismissed “great stupidity or incorrigibly filthy habits.”
- June 1852. **Miss Fay**. long-term illness. Suspended her teaching.
- Two classes only. Points and Tenney share enrollments. Two more boys ran away. Impracticable.
- Keith and Points now share senior and middle classes.
- Miss Fay**, from her sickbed.
- Curriculum.
- Impact of culture on curriculum.
- No new baptisms.
- Yang Sin Kway briefly acts as teacher (vice Miss Fay) and overall as classroom assistant.
- Need for Chinese Christian teachers.
- School has increasing acceptance among Chinese. Improved staffing would permit increased enrolments.
- 1852, December. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 816
- Arrival of **Miss Catharine I. E. Jones**.
- Miss Fay’s** health improved.
- (left Shanghai 16 Feb 53; arrived New York, 19 May 53).
- Serious financial problems as result of changing rates of exchange.
- Bishop Boone meets Foreign Committee to discuss episcopal jurisdiction and relations with Anglican missions. Limited deputational work.

1852, December.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Now in US. Letters sent before he left Shanghai. Reports visitations outlined above. Endorses teaching in Shanghai dialect. General missionary agreement in using romanized Shanghai dialect but diversity of views on romanization. Protestant Missionaries monthly prayer meeting. Itineration. Use of filial piety values to offset abuse of missionaries by youths. Freedom of movement and liberty to preach. Birth of son to Mr. and Mrs. Nelson. Citizenship status in question. School opened by Anglican Church Missionary Society. Solar Eclipse—Chinese ceremonies. Chinese Holy Communion celebrated on first Sunday of new moon. Death and funeral of one of Soodong’s adopted child. Standardised form of romanization. Willie Syle seriously ill—possibly meningitis. Private hospital for foreign seamen. Deaths and departures of American missionaries. Christmas services. Chinese man comments on his attitude to Chinese worship practices.	816
1852, December 23.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> End of first year in China. General review of activity. Public preaching efforts.	821

### TAIPING REBELLION AND TRIAD SOCIETY UPRISINGS.

1853, February 5.	Review of Episcopal China Mission in the <i>Church Journal</i> . Triad Society unrest in Treaty Ports encouraged by Taiping Rebellion.	822
1853, February 16.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Departure of Rev. Edward W. Syle, Mrs Syle, Walter and Willie Syle to US. <b>Miss Fay</b> back from rest break but still unable to teach.	824
1853, March 14.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> in <i>Southern Churchman</i> . Triad Society unrest in Treaty Ports.	826
1853, March 19.	<b>Rev Robert Nelson</b> with comments added by <b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> . Taiping siege and capture of Nanking. Syle—China “a house divided.”	826
1853, n.d.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> in <i>Christian Witness</i> .	829
1853, April 5.	<b>London Missionary Society</b> observations about situation in China.	832
1853, May 11.	<b>Rev. John Littell</b> , American Presbyterian. Taiping unlikely to succeed.	837
1853, May 23.	<b>Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong</b> , to Archbishop of Canterbury. Observations about Taiping and future of Christian missions in China.	837
1853, June 1.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> . Missionaries needed.	842
1853, June 1.	<b>Professor Neumann of Munich</b> (from <i>London Times</i> ). Titles and translations of Taiping pamphlets from Mr. Walter Meadows.	842
1853, June 21/	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Bishop Boone to attend PEC General Convention. Comment on Taiping Rebellion. <b>Miss Fay</b> has resumed teaching.	843
1853, July 14.	<i>Nashville Union and American</i> . Re Taiping and foreign arming of Shanghai.	844
1853, July 14,	<b>Missionary Meeting-Virginia Theological Seminary—<i>Southern Churchman</i></b> .	844
1853, July 17.	<i>Nashville Union and American</i> . Progress of Taiping Rebellion.	844
1853, July 25.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle</b> , New York. Challenges for China Missions and call for new missionaries.	845
1853, August 6.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Taiping and mission issues.	846
1853, August 23.	<i>Nashville Union and American</i> . Official UK mission to Taiping rebels in Nanking.	847

1853, August 25.	<b>Rev. Charles Taylor, American Methodist Episcopal Mission.</b> <i>Lewisburg Chronicle.</i> The religion of the Taiping rebels.	848
1853, September 7.	<b>London Missionary Society</b> Report on first signs of Triads in Shanghai.	848
1853, September 7.	<b>Shanghai Captured by Triads</b>	848
1853, November.	<b>London Athenaeum.</b> “The Taking of the City Shanghai by a Band of Rebels.”	849
1853, September.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle,</b> New York. Opportunities for Christianity in China.	856
1853, September 9.	<b>British Consulate Notification, North China Herald.</b> Triad capture of Shanghai. <i>North China Herald.</i>	856
1853, September 9.	<b>Miss Emma Jones.</b> Incidents during the siege of Shanghai. Additional Notes by Rev. Edward W. Syle.	856 859
1853, September 10.	<b>North China Herald. Sale of Chinese official ranks.</b>	859
1853, September 18 to November 29.	<b>Episcopal Quarterly Report from Shanghai.</b> Departure of Rev. Thomas McClatchie, CMS. Chai’s first baptism. Imperial Government;s first attempt to defeat Triad rebels in Shanghai. Episcopal missionaries inspect Imperial troops. Visit of Japan Squadron under Commodore Matthew Perry. Indiscipline of local Imperial troops. Missionaries unable to enter old city of Shanghai for two months. Imperial troops assault International Settlement. Christ Church Chinese mission chapel damaged. Taiping rebels near Beijing.	859
1853, September 20.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop Boone’s visit to the US.	862
1853, September 20.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Che-Hien, (City magistrate) murdered by Triads. Triads promise protection for International Settlement and foreigners. Claims that missionary operations unaffected by see p 807. Missionary residences protected by foreign warships. Confusion for Chinese businesses. Problems for missions in negotiating financial matters. Progress and behaviour of Taiping Rebellion. Episcopal Mission much as usual. Girls’ School building completed. About 180 boys and girls in Episcopal and Anglican schools.	862
1853, October.	<b>London Times- Chinese Revolution.</b>	864
1853, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> 18 <sup>th</sup> Annual Report.	868
1853, October 5.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> 8 <sup>th</sup> Annual Report.	870
1853, October 10.	<b>New York Daily Tribune.</b> Reports on Taiping Rebellion.	875
1853, October 17.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> addresses missionary meeting of PEC Board of Missions. Chinese convert, Tong, [Chiu Kiung] address..	876
1853, October 17.	<b>Syle</b> address.	877
1853, October 23.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Charge to Anglican clergy in Shanghai. Taiping Rebellion.	878
1853, November 1.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> War between Triads and Imperial troops-inconclusive outcomes. Foreign warships guarding International Settlement. Unable to enter old city of Shanghai for over a month. Visit of Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong and charge to his clergy. American missionary families seeking refuge in PEC Mission. Private Letter from Shanghai. Episcopal missionaries letter—bad behaviour of Imperial troops.	879



1853, November 14.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop Boone, Mrs. Boone, Mr. Points, Chiu Kiung returning to China. New missionaries— <b>Miss E. J. Wray</b> and <b>Miss Jeannette Conover.</b>	881
1853, November 15.	<b>Extracts from a Private letter.</b>	881
1853, n.d.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Episcopal Jurisdiction. Nelson's critique of Bishop of Victoria's charge.	882
1853, November 28.	<b>Author Unknown, Probably Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Boys' School proceeding quietly. Triad rebels in Amoy. Food in good supply in Shanghai. Comments by Rev. Edward W. Syle.	882
1853,, November 28.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith. (Southern Churchman).</b> Taiping Rebellion and Christianity. Terms for God debate— Taiping use of Shang-te. Episcopal Mission near closure.	884
1853, December.	<b>Colonial Church Chronicle.</b> Private comment on Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong— Taipings and China's Future. Hopes for conversion of all China. Description of Colony of Hong Kong. HMS Hermes visit to Nanking.	886
1853, December 9.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle,</b> New York. Address at General Theological Seminary.	888
1853, December 16.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Private letter. Burning of Chinese City of Shanghai.	890
1853, December 17.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Triads easily defeat Imperial troops.	891
1853, December 22.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Educational matters. Day-school visitations. Repeats information.	892
1853, December 30.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> French warship visits Nanking. Receipt of donation from Trinity Church, Staunton VA. Continuing financial problems from high rate of exchange.	893

## **Part 11 Shanghai, 1854-1855.**

**895-1020**

1854.	<b>Women's Work in Shanghai.</b>	896
1854, January.	<b>London Quarterly Review.</b> The Religious Character of the Chinese Insurrection. The Connection Between the Revolution and the Christian Religion. The Origin of the Movement. The Character of the Christianity of the Chinese Insurgents. Adverse to the Religious Character of the Movement. In Favor of the Religious Character of the Movement. The Dangers which Threaten this Religious Movement. Our Own Duty with Respect to the Religious Movement in China.	897
1854, January 24.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	902
1854, January 12.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Lecture on China to Protestant Episcopal Mutual Benefit Society.	903
1854, January 13.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Private letter with comments by Rev. Edward W. Syle. The Triad occupation and sufferings of the people. Taiping have not succeeded in north. Nelson's assessment of the religious nature of Taiping reviewed by Syle.	905
1854, January 16.	<b>Rev. Dr. William Sparrow to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Syle on leave in U.S. Shares doubts with Sparrow and response.	907
1854, January 20.	<b>Rev. Dr. E. C. Bridgman in San Francisco Pacific.</b> Observations on Taiping movement.	908
1854, February 13.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Notes Bishop Boone returning to Shanghai.	908

Shai

Boo

	No fighting near American mission—place of safety. Boys' School reopens after vacation break.	
1854, February 23.	<b>Unknown Episcopal author</b> , possibly a woman missionary. Taou-Tai relocates near American Settlement. USS Plymouth—Shanghai. Other Chinese officials relocating in International Settlement. Chinese in USA-comment by Rev. Edward W. Syle. <sup>31</sup>	909
1854, March 2.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Arrival of US Consul Robert C. Murphy. Shanghai troubles continue. Condition of Chinese Episcopal Christians in old city. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) purchases land near Boone's house. Discipline of Chai's brother, Kwong Chung. US Navy officer later serves in Confederate Navy. Japan rejects US contacts.	909
1854, May 9.	<b>President Fillmore to the Emperor of Japan.</b>	913
1854, April 11.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Continuing conflict between Triads, Taiping and Imperial forces. Aggressive behaviour of Imperial troops brings Allied reaction. Foreign line of defence on western approaches to International Settlement.	915
1854, April 12.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> British negotiate armistice in Shanghai. More foreign missionaries remove from Chinese city to the American Settlement. CMS School in old city of Shanghai closed.	917
1854, April 14.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Return to Shanghai. Triad rebels number about 3-4000. Imperial troops and undisciplined rabble of about 10,000-20,000. All foreign missionaries out of old city of Shanghai and safe with Americans at Hongkou.	917
1854, April 14.	<b>Mr. John T. Points.</b> Return to Shanghai. Voyage of 150 days.	918
1854, April 22.	<b>Unknown Episcopal missionary</b> in <i>Southern Episcopalian</i> . <sup>32</sup> Notes on journey via East Indies. Impressions of Shanghai.	919
1854, April 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Shanghai in deplorable state. Mission chapel at Hongkou completed Opening services. Rev. Cleveland Keith and <b>Caroline Tenney</b> marry (27 April). <sup>33</sup> The Chinese Revolution (Taiping Rebellion).	921
1854, May 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Shanghai-Destruction and misery. New missionaries should be single men for time being. Increase in cost of operations. Boys' school urgently needs another male teacher, preferably with medical skills. Chinese anxious to enrol boys in Episcopal Boys' School.	926

Rep

31 An indication of Syle's interest in the Chinese living in the United States. See Welch, Ian, *The Chinese and the Episcopal Church in mid-19<sup>th</sup> Century America*. Oline 1 July 2013 at — <https://digitalcollections.anu.edu.au/handle/1885/10096>

32 On internal evidence, i.e., a returning missionary, the letter was written either by Mrs. Boone or Mr. John T. Points.

33 Welch, Ian, *Caroline (Carrie) Phebe Tenney-Keith: Episcopal Church Missionary in Shanghai, China*, online 1 July 2013 — <https://digitalcollections.anu.edu.au/handle/1885/10097>

	Report on candidates for ordination. Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) to marry 9 May. <b>Misses Wray and Conover</b> teaching in Girls' School.	
1854, May 6.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Arrival of Boone and family, Points, <b>Miss Wray and Miss Conover.</b> Rev. Cleveland Keith and <b>Miss Tenney</b> marry—honeymoon in Ningpo.	927
1854, May 20.	<b>Unknown correspondent</b> in secular press. Comment by <b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Chinese Insurgents at Shanghai. USS Susquehanna to take US Commissioner McLane to Nanking for discussions with Taiping leaders. Taiping advance on Peking. Report of contact between Nanking Taiping and Triad rebels in Shanghai. Syle's comments. Taiping Proclamation. Reports from <i>North China Herald.</i> Analysis of Taiping Proclamation and general comments by Syle.	928
1854, May 30.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Shanghai under continuing Imperial siege. "Wonderful opening of Japan." Missionaries safe and can find refuge on warships if necessary.	933
1854, May 30.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> with note to uncle. Domestic issues on return to Bishop's house. Marriages (Keith & Chai). Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) wedding music. Wong has built house at cost of \$370—"doing very well indeed." Tong Chu Kiang is paid \$5 a month. Murders common. Dr. Martyn, an American, a leader in shooting Chinese. Imperial troops useless. Boone dismisses Taiping as Christian imposters. Boone's request for care of older children Henry and Mary in US. Old illness returns	934
1854, June 27.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Visit of US Commissioner McLane to Nankin in USS Susquehanna. Rev. Michael Culbertson (American Presbyterian) interpreter. English view of Taiping. <b>Miss Fay</b> and <b>Mrs. Nelson</b> experience illness. Believes Anglican chants more suited to Chinese worship than usual hymns. Rev. J. D. Powell of Virginia appointed missionary but withdraws. Dr. M. W. Fish appointed medical missionary.	935
1854, July 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Anarchy prevails. More English reports on Taiping. Boone repeats his dismissal of Taiping.	938
1854, July 21.	<b>Unknown Episcopal missionary in Southern Churchman.</b> English visit to Nankin. Foreign support for Imperial Government. Mission activities improving. Growth of merchant interest in American Settlement district. Triad rebels seek foreign aid to evacuate Shanghai. Refused. Taiping "Revelations" fom <i>Colonial Church Chronicle.</i> Disputes among the Taiping leadership.	939
1854, August 9.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Taiping officer seeks baptism. Killed in skirmish. Imperialists tunnelling to place mines under Chinese city walls. Deaths of foreign children. Conducts services on USS Vandalia.	942

	Chinese attendances very poor.	
	Tension in city between Triad groups.	
	Reports Syle ministering to Chinese in New York.	
	New arrivals for Methodist Episcopal mission.	
	More American missions building in Hongkou.	
	Assessment of Imperial troops.	
	Burial arrangements for deceased Christian under cover of US flag.	
	Protestant missionaries attend worship in Nelson's house.	
	Protestant prayer meeting attended by British and US officers.	
1854, August 17.	<b>Dr. Bettleheim</b> <sup>34</sup> , <b>Missionary in Okinawa.</b> <i>Church Journal.</i>	944
1854, August 21.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	945
	Triad occupation of Shanghai for nearly a year.	
	Foreign warships have prevented assaults on foreign residents.	
	Three Boys' School scholars leave for US on board USS Susquehanna.	
	Further report on the Taiping leader— Hung Siu-Tseun—by Rev. Theodore Hamberg.	
	Concluding observations by Bishop Boone.	
1854, August 23.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	949
	Further report on the Taiping Leader.	
1854, September 29.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	953
	Imperialist assault on Chinese city from river.	
1854, September 30.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	954
	Imperialist assault at North Gate.	
	Foreign missionaries unable to exit old city.	
	Episcopal missionaries unable to enter old city.	
	Episcopal missionaries inspect Imperial fleet.	
	Soo-dong reports situation in old city, including damage to Christ Church.	
	Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong, ordains Rev. G. R. Moreton (formerly of London Missionary Society) for Loochoo Naval Mission (Okinawa).	
	Disappointment at failure to appoint new missionaries.	
	Printing of one million Chinese New Testaments to meet demand expected.	
1854, September 30.	<b>Mr. John T. Points.</b>	956
	Identifies Triad rebels holding Shanghai as former pirates.	
	Yang Soo-Dong arrested briefly by Triads.	
	Chinese not allowed to enter old city of Shanghai with foreign missionaries.	
	Boys' School has sixty scholars.	
	Three Episcopal School scholars to US on USS Susquehanna. (Ny Ta Zak, Ny Hoong Nioke (Wu Hongyu), and Loke Ah Nur).	
	One Episcopal School scholar to US on USS Vandalia. (Tung Ah Ling).	
	Two outstanding Episcopal School scholars to US on SS Panama. (Yang Sing Kway and Ngan Yoong Kiung). <sup>35</sup>	
1854, October 1.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b>	957
	Pastoral visits—illness and requests for baptism. Opium addiction.	
	Revision of St. Matthew's Gospel in Shanghai dialect.	
	Pastoral visits with Dr. M. Fish.	
	Skill of Chinese robbers.	
	Woman seeks baptism but refused for insincerity.	
	An educated leper seeks instruction.	
1854, October 26.	<b>Rev. Dr. William Sparrow to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	959
1854, November.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Report.</b>	959
	Impact of Triad insurrection on Episcopal mission.	

34 Bernard Jean Bettleheim, Medical Missionary on Okinawa, April 1846 to July 1854. online 1 July 2012 at — <http://www.baxleystamps.com/litho/bettelheim.shtml>

35 See entry under 1854, November 2, pp 904-905.

1854, November 2.	<b>Bishop Boone, Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Sufferings of Chinese under Triads. Disposition of Episcopal School scholars to US on SS Panama. (Yang Sing Kway and Ngan Yoong Kiung).	959
1854, November 18.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Triad rebels short of food. General News. Keith has been ill Points is “very delicate.”	960
1854, December 1.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Married or single men needed as missionaries in China. Imperial Government likely to regain control of Shanghai and all China.	960
1854, December 29.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Mandarin (Vung Le) or literary language and regional dialects. Male literacy levels in China very low. Boys go to school around four years but not really literate. Missionaries hope to use dialects to improve literacy. Use of Chinese characters (phonetic sounds) and romanization. Ningpo model. Advantages of romanization. Chinese Block Printing. Extent of use of Shanghai dialect.	961
1855, January 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Anarchy the major issue as Taiping rebellion weakens. Need for strong foreign naval presence. Active French response to rebellion.	925
1855, February 18.	<b>Triad Rebels Evacuate Shanghai.</b>	926
1855, March 1.	<b>Unnamed female Episcopal Missionary</b> , probably <b>Miss Caroline Jones.</b> Decline in enrolments in female day-school. Sad state of Chinese woman teacher after robbery by Triads. Family crises. Protestant missionaries monthly meeting. <b>Miss Fay's</b> commitment to Boys' School. Visits to female day-schools. Arrival of USS Powhatan. Chinese link Christianity to “prosperity and plenty.”	964
1855, March 13.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—</b> Appeal for Funds.	968
1855, March 24.	<b>Mr. John T. Points.</b> Itinerant work. Another boys' day-school. Chai a good communicator with ordinary people. Itineration by boat. Book and tract distribution. Local curiosity. Met Methodist Episcopal missionaries, Belton & Kelley.	972
1855, April 7.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Shanghai quiet.	973
1855, April 10.	<b>Mr. John T. Points.</b> Itineration by boat. Catholic Christians. Estimate varies 300,000—800,000. Protestant Christians. c100. Catholic priests always wear Chinese dress/costume. Meets LMS Colporteur—Soong. Itineration by boat with Rev William Aitchison American Presbyterian. Reaching Lake Taihu, west of Soochow. On Grand Imperial Canal. Inspection of boat by soldier at barrier station. Arrival in Woo-Chow, a silk production centre. Over-enthusiastic welcome from local people. Problems with local dialect resolved by writing characters. Supply of books and tracts exhausted.	973

1855, May.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	977	
	Reports departure of Dr. and Mrs. Fish (see above).		
1855, May 2.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	977	
	Business recovering rapidly after departure of Triads.		
	No news of Taiping Rebellion.		
1855, May 2.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	978	
	Renewal of mission work in old city of Shanghai.		
	Easter Services encouraging.		
	Chai's daughter baptized. Boys' School tailor baptized.		
	Baptism of illiterate adult.		
	Aged Chinese communicants. Chinese care for aged.		
	Response of Chinese to missionaries—typical excuses not to listen.		
1855, May 18.	<b>Mr. John T. Points.</b>	979	
	Itineration by boat with Aitchison.		
	Book and tract distribution.		
	Meet two Englishmen—Use of foreign flags for identification.		
	Three days walking. Stay in temple. Sedan Chair. 5 Servants.		
	Well received by local people.		
	Beauty of Chinese countryside.		
	Total distance travelled-250 miles.		
	Ten Protestant missionaries itinerating. Change in official attitudes.		
	Almost all cities within 200 miles visited.		
1855, May 29.	<b>Bishop Boone. 10<sup>th</sup> Annual Report.</b>	981	
	Triad rebels false claim to be Taiping.		
	Improvement in conditions following withdrawal of Triads.		
	Missionaries able to itinerate without restrictions.		
	Chinese attending churches in increased numbers. <sup>36</sup>		
	Christ Church escaped fires.		
	Hope that Syle will return.		
	One village shows active contempt for Christianity.		
	More day-schools.		
	Boys' School—Miss Fay overall superintendence of boys welfare.		
	Girls' School—Miss Emma Jones; Miss Caroline Jones.		Day
	5 Boys and 5 girls schools. Chinese teachers, male and female.		
	Each missionary to superintend two schools.		
	Also used as preaching places.		
	Access to parents through children.		
	Itinerations by Mr. Points. Six weeks away.		
	Statistics: Total baptisms-41: 24 males, 12 females. Six since died.		
	Need for pension scheme for Episcopal missionary families.		
	One Shanghai dollar = 1.40 American dollars.		
1855, June.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Report, 1854-1855.</b>	984	
	Repetition of items above.		
1855, July 6 to November 5.	<b>Lydia MARY Fay. Missionary Work of Female Assistants in China.</b>	989	Sun
	Chinese praying for rain.		
	Bishop Boone visits Foochow (Fuzhou).		
	Chinese language studies.		
	Obedience of boys to her wishes.		
	Chinese fasting to propitiate rain god.		
	Missionaries social life.		
	Thief detained on mission property. Sent to US Marshall at Consulate.		
	Effects of drought. Crop and garden failures.		
	Average daily temperature =c90° F. (c33° Celsius).		

36 Bishop Boone does not advance any specific reasons for improved church attendances. One assessment is that the Shanghai Chinese chose to identify with foreign missionaries for protection from rebels and officials alike.

	Bishop Boone examines Boys' School.		
	Boys' School three week vacation begins.		
	Deacon Tong Chu Kiung engaged to marry to Girls' School scholar.		
	Chinese style betrothal ceremony.		
	Returns home to attend seriously ill boy. Dr. Fish in attendance.		
	Visits one of Mrs. Keith's day-schools for girls.		
	Sick boy refused permission to go home.		
	Continues language studies.		
	Seven boys ill. Fay exhausted.		
	Chinese Autumn Festival. Moon Cakes.		
	Resumes classroom teaching.		
	Cotton harvest. Chinese cheating on weight of cotton.		
	Chinese women and literacy.		
	Cooperation between Bishop Boone and Rev. Dr. Walter Medhurst.		
	Catechism on the Ten Commandments.		
	Reflections on learning of boys—Biblical studies v. Chinese classics.		
	Bishop Boone an able preacher. In good health.		
	To bed at midnight. Up at 4 a.m.—caring for sick boys.		
	Attends death bed of Chinese Christian man.		
	Attends sick boy in school. Death and funeral service.		
1855, July 30.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Letter to friend in <i>Southern Episcopalian</i> .	997	
	Heart problems.		
	“Boo-Boo” a wealthy Chinese woman but covetousness prevents baptism.		
	Purchase of Chinese house next to Christ Church.		
	Mission properties escape fires.		
	Blind young men learn Lord's Prayer and Commandments from two blind communicants.		
	Evangelism among blind.		
	Day-Schools. Between 200-300 boys and girls enrolled.	945	
1855, August 28.	<b>Miss Caroline Jones(?)</b> <i>Missionary Work of Female Assistants in China.</i>	999	
	Summary of duties. Teaches English to boys each morning 9am to 12pm.		
	English conversation for half-an-hour daily.		
	Afternoons spent learning Chinese.		
	Bishop purchases house adjoining Christ Church from Buddhist nunnery.		
	Building erected for two day-schools-boys and girls—20 students each.		
	Mrs. Boone's former Chinese language teacher employed. His boy and girl enrolled.		
	“Juvenile Instruction” (Yu Yak) in Chinese characters, Shanghai dialect.		
	Introduction of embroidery classes to encourage parents to enrol girls.		
	Daughter of Deacon Yang Soo-dong employed as teacher.		
1855, August 31.	<b>Dr. M. W. Fish.</b>	1001	
	120 day passage from New York via East Indies and Sunda Strait.		
	Hospitality of Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.		
	First Sunday attend service in Mission Chapel (Church of our Saviour).		
1855, September 15.	<b>Letter from 'J.E.S.' USS San Jacinto.</b> Visit to Japan.	1002	
	Japanese honour treaty made by Commodore Perry, Anchorage, Coal.		
	Japanese police officers follow Americans.		
	Hari Kari described.		
	Description of housing.		
	Japanese Bath Houses.		
	Public Bazaar at Shimoda.		
	Japanese Lacquer Ware of finest quality.		
	Reception by Japanese Governor described.		
1855, September 29.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Assessment of Taiping leader.	1004	Taij
1855, October 4.	<b>Miss Caroline Jones.</b> <i>Missionary Work of Female Assistants in China.</i>	1005	
	Girls' School. Operating for four years despite the disruption of the		

	Triad occupation.	
	Three girls withdrawn.	
	One by death;	
	another by marriage to Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci)	
	Girl chosen according to Chinese custom, (small feet)	
	enrolled in Girls' School, (baptized, confirmed, communicant);	
	Third girl married to former Boys' School scholar and successful	
	businessman but not a Christian.	
	Two girls baptized.	
	Summary of daily routine and curriculum in Girls' School.	
1855, October 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	1008
	Bishop's health again poor.	
1855, October 13.	<b>Rev. Samuel Wells Williams, ABCFM.</b>	1008
	Visited Japan with Commodore Perry.	
	Missionary best in official consular capacity; need to learn language.	
	Japanese historical distrust of Christianity.	
	The LewChew (Loochoo—Okinawa) Islands.	
	Japanese Language and Scriptures.	
	Some early translations, including Gutzlaff, but unsatisfactory.	
	Written language uses Chinese characters with Japanese syllabaries	
	(Hiragana, Katagana).	
1855, October 16.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b>	1010
	Illness among PEC missionaries and holiday excursion by boat.	
	Description of boats.	
	Imperial Canal.	
	Lake Taihu. (now 115 river miles from Shanghai).	
	No problems with officials.	
	Hill resort reached (now known as Kuling)	
	Chinese funeral service.	
	Chinese "anchorites."	
1855, November 5.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> (Original report precedes previous item).	1012
	Hill resort.	
	Response of local people to foreigners.	
	Dr. Fish.	
	Rev. Edward Syle in California.	
	Illness in Episcopal Mission.	
1855, November 5.	<b>Dr. M. W. Fish.</b>	1015
	All missionaries have experienced illness.	
	Importance of supplies of quinine—smalaria is main cause.	
	Boys' School. Death of scholar. Miss Fay collapsed.	
	American sea-captain dies, refuses visit from clergy.	
	Visits impoverished sick Chinese with Rev. Robert Nelson.	
1855, November 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	1016
	High level of sickness among foreign community.	
	Need for ministry among foreign seamen.	
	Dr. Fish opens hospital and dispensary in old city of Shanghai.	
1855, November 12.	<b>Mrs. Caroline Tenney-Keith.</b>	1017
	Disappointment involving Chinese lady enaurier who evades commitment	
	by pretending ignorance.	
	Obtains sustenance money—used to buy opium for husband.	
	A kindly Chinese woman enquirer.	
	Girls' girls' day-school. Woman teacher seeks baptism but does not	
	understand sin and repentance.	
	Visits house with blackened straw at door signifying a death.	
	Death symbols and rituals.	
1855, November 30.	<b>New Episcopal Missionaries.</b>	1019
		Rev



**Part 12 Shanghai, 1856.****1021-1120**

- 1856, January 29. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover.** 1022  
Boys' School. Classes and Enrolments.  
Curriculum.
- 1856, January 29. **Mrs. Caroline Tenney Keith.** 1022  
Boys' School. Class and Enrolments.  
Curriculum.  
Acquiring English language and reading skills.  
Conover's repeated illness.  
Benefits of Romanization and Shanghai dialect.
- 1856, February 1. **Rev. Cleveland Keith.** 1024  
Tong Chu Kiung passes final examination for diaconate.  
Woman believes without foundation knowledge.  
Chinese New Year.  
Tong Chu Kiung ordained deacon.  
Tong Chu Kiung preaches first sermon.  
Three Chinese Catholic priests visit Boys' School.  
**Miss Emma Jones** and Mr. John T. Points leave for US.  
Rev. and Mrs. Keith take leave in "the Hills."  
Rev. and Mrs. Edward W. Syle return to Shanghai.
- 1856, February 4. **Miss Caroline Jones. Missionary Work of Female Assistants in China.** 1025  
"Leesburgh" Day-School. In home of Chinese woman Nee-Boo-Boo.  
Recruits young woman teacher. Wife of Jones' Chinese teacher.  
Enrolment of twenty "wild-looking" girls.  
Bishop Boone's skill in speaking Chinese.  
Curriculum.  
Everyday street scenes.  
Discussions with Chinese women and their lack of interest.  
Bishop Boone's examination.  
Bishop Boone's Catechisms widely valued.
- 1856, February 6. **Bishop Boone.** 1028  
**Miss Emma Jones** takes leave in US.  
Mission short of funds due to failure of remittances from US.  
All day-schools closed.  
Reduction in payments to American missionaries and Chinese staff.  
Rev. and **Mrs. Keith** to continue girls' school at own cost.  
**Miss Conover** to continue school at own cost.  
Exchange Rate variations.  
Taiping Rebellion weakening but continuing.
- 1856, February 8. **Un-named Episcopal Woman Missionary.** 1030  
Importance of family in determining acceptance of Christianity.  
Tong Chu Kiung ordained deacon. Woi  
Good work of Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).  
Tong Chu Kiung preaches first sermon.  
**Women's matters.**
- 1856, February 19. **Americans recruited for British forces in China.** 1032
- 1856, March 6. **Bishop Boone.** 1032  
Tong Chu Kiung ordained deacon.
- 1856, March 6. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover.** 1033  
Tong Chu Kiung ordained deacon.  
Bishop Boone's Sermon at Ordination of Tong Chiu Kiung.  
Tong Chiu Kiung preaches first sermon.
- 1856, March 6. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1035 Ton  
Rev. Cleveland Keith and Rev. Robert Nelson sign testimonials.  
Girls' School. **Miss Conover** and **Miss Caroline Jones**.  
Boys' School. **Miss Fay**—General oversight and teacher of Chinese.

- Miss Emma Jones and Mr. John T. Points returning to US.  
 Impending arrival of Rev. John Liggins and Rev. Channing M. Williams.  
 Impending return of Rev. and Mrs. Edward W. Syle.  
 Nelson supervises two day-schools at Christ Church in old city.
- 1856, March 6. **Miss Emma G. Jones. Final Report.** 1036  
 Returning to US after twelve years in Shanghai as self-supporting missionary.  
 Girls' School—retrospective of her twelve years.  
 Chinese motivations for associating with missionaries.  
 Purchase of girl bride for \$8.
- 1856, March 6. **Mrs. Caroline Tenney Keith. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1039  
 Illness among PEC missionaries.  
 Day-school activities.  
 Differences in Chinese and American customs.  
 Politeness of Chinese.  
 Poverty of most enquirers.  
 Evangelism is very slow work.  
 Boys' School—observations.
- 1856, March 6. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover.** 1041  
 Boys' and Girls' School—staff changes.  
 Girls' School—all instruction in Chinese.  
 Display of Chinese lanterns  
 Prevalence of small-pox.  
 (Signified by pright bamboo pole with little broom and basket at top)  
 Girls' School. Curriculum.
- 1856, April 3. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1042  
 Day-schools. 1200 characters needed to read St. Matthew's Gospel.  
 Cleanliness of house of Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Rev. Huang Guangci).  
 Chinese calculation of a child's age.  
 Cleaning of ancestral tombs.  
 Children not allowed home at this festival.  
 Burial practices. "Bone jars."  
 Politeness obscures real attitudes.  
 Loneliness of missionaries. Appreciation of letters from home.  
 Rev. and Mrs. Edward W. Syle return from US.  
 Bishop Boone conducts examination.  
 Importance of family in determining acceptance of Christianity.  
 Most worship services now conducted in Chinese.  
 Bridal Procession observed.  
 Journey from Hongkou to Christ Church.  
 Christ Church day-school. 24 present out of 30 enrolled.  
 Visit to Longhua Pagoda with Medhurst family.  
 Lepers in Shanghai.  
 Baptism of Robert Habersham Boone.  
 London Missionary Society printing office in Shanghai.
- 1856, April 5. **Miss Caroline Jones. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1047  
 Girls' School. No language skills, taught Americans-style  
 needle-work and knitting. Some English-language teaching.  
 Day-School vice Miss Jones.  
 Girls' School. Curriculum.  
 Girl expelled for thieving.
- 1856, April 5. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1049  
 Episcopal Mission to Chinese in California a "total failure."
- 1856, April 29. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1050  
 Arrived in Shanghai 15 April 1856.  
 Improvements in Shanghai mission and city.  
 In charge of Christ Church.

1856, April 30.	<b>Miss Caroline Jones. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.</b> Girls' School—Religious interest. Chinese term for single women missionary—Kooniang-Kuniong. Girls request baptism. One girl used by family as beggar. Grant of alms to poor women conditional on attending Christ Church. Bishop Boone commences girls Bible study group.	1050
1856, May 1.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Rev. and Mrs. Cleveland Keith return to US on sick leave.	1052
1856, May 6.	<b>Church Missionary Society. 57th Annual Report.</b> China Mission. Opium trade weakens appeal of foreign missions. CMS mission statistics.	1052
1856, May 14.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.</b> Boys' School Report. Fay's continuing health problems. Sickness widespread among boys. Attended by Chinese doctor. Visit from three Chinese merchants—first visit to a foreign house. Impressed by reports of language skills of foreign ladies. Enforcing student ten year contract on parents. Cleaning graves of ancestors. "Ching Meng [Qingmeng]." Illness of Rev. and Mrs. Cleveland Keith (see above May 1). Fay's advanced studies in Chinese. Knowledge of Latin. Formal politeness in language not always demonstrated in behaviour. Bishop Boone conducts boys' Bible class.	1053
1856, June.	<b>Bishop William Ingraham Kip, PEC Missionary Bishop in California.</b> Idol Worship in California with illustrations from San Francisco and Melbourne, Australia.	1059
1856, June.	<b>Church Journal, New York.</b> China Correspondence. Rev. Edward W. Syle revisits site of first labors in Shanghai. Widespread knowledge of facts of Christianity in Shanghai. American emphasis on romanization. Visits St. Francis Catholic Cathedral. Syle well-known to Chinese Catholics. Franciscans and Lazarists replaced by Jesuits. Importance of Anglican chant. Rev. Channing M. Williams—participation in first Eucharist in China. Calculating years of age in China.	1065
1856, June.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.</b> Boys' School. Repairs, improvements and drainage works. <b>Miss Fay's Duties.</b> 1. Of Providing the Boys Rice and Cooking. 2. Providing Clothes. 3. Care of the Boys out of School. 4. Care of the Sick. 5. Care of the Chinese Studies. 6. Religious Instruction. 7. English Department.	1067
1856, June 8.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Impressions of the PEC Mission in Shanghai. California. Head of executed men on display in cages. Visit to Wong Ka Mo Dur, site of earliest work in old city of Shanghai. Christ Church. Instruction after baptism as well as before. Rev. Cleveland Keith's primer in romanized local dialect. Involved with British chaplain in 'mission to seamen.' Mr. and Mrs. Syle visit girls' day-school. Arrival of Rev. John Liggins and Rev. Channing M. Williams.	1069

- Activities of Rev. Tong Chui Kiung and Rev. Wong Kong Chai.  
 Pastoral work.  
 American seeks education for three Chinese girl orphans.  
 Liggins and Syle visit St. Francis Xavier Cathedral.  
 Kiung Fong-tsur, Leading Chinese banker and superintendent of Chinese Benevolent Institution. Now unable to cope with needs.  
 Need for a missionary physician.  
 Girls' School visit.  
 A good Chinese life not an automatic road to Christian baptism.  
 Visit to a day-school, discussion with local people, general disinterest in imperial matters, local officials must be moderate in taxation.  
 Discussion with a Chinese teacher.  
 Boys' School. Curriculum  
 Using alms recipients as colporteurs.  
 Yung A Wing-graduate of Yale College.  
 Anglican/Episcopal cooperation.  
 US Consul Murphy and US Commissioner Dr. Peter Parker (missionary).  
 Syle's daily round.  
 Anglican chant.
- 1856, June 28. **Rev. Channing M. Williams.** 1077  
 Seven months journey from New York via Sydney, Australia.  
 PEC members prayer meeting.  
 Williams enjoys familiar Episcopal service in Chinese.  
 Williams and Nelson visit Christ Church. Day-school.  
 Courtesy calls on Protestant missionaries in Shanghai.  
 Boys' School.  
 Attends first Holy Communion service in China.  
 Observes "heathen" procession honouring god of rain.  
 The daily round of activities
- 1856, June 28. **Bishop Boone. 11<sup>th</sup> Annual Report.** 1079  
 Missionaries have freedom of movement.  
 Three PEC preaching places. Christ Church in old city. Church of our Saviour, Hongkou and a hired room in Wong Ka Mo Dur.  
 Services at Hongkou largest Protestant attendance in China.  
 Difficult financial situation precludes expansion.  
 Importance of Episcopal schools.  
 Boys' School [40 boys] financed by Foreign Missions Committee.  
 Girls' School [forty girls] financed at expense of missionaries.  
 Two boys day-schools [fifty boys].  
 Four girls day-schools (one hundred girls). TOTAL 230 young people.  
 Baptism and betrothal of Sur Yiin and Rev. Tong Chui Kiung.  
 Two blind men baptized but proved imposters. Sought personal profit.  
 Confirmed wife of US Consul Murphy.  
 Yang Soo-dong removed from list of candidates for ordination.  
 Suicide of wife. Accusation of intimacy with adopted daughter.  
 Resignation of Dr. Fish, appointed US Vice-Consul.  
 Tong Chu-Kiung ordained deacon.  
 Miss Emma Jones and Mr. John T. Points return to US.  
 Return of Rev. and Mrs. Edward W. Syle.  
 Statistics.  
 Arrival of Rev. John Liggins and Rev. Channing M. Williams.
- 1856, June 30. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1082  
 Seven months journey from New York including sixty days from Sydney, Australia to Shanghai. Encountered icebergs.  
 (9 days in Rio de Janeiro, 21 days Sydney)  
 Need for Missionaries in Rio de Janeiro.

- Notes on Anglican church in Sydney.  
Welcome to PEC Mission.  
Enjoys first church service in China.  
Impressions of “heathen” Shanghai.
- 1856, June 30. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1083  
Arrival of Liggins and Williams.  
Nelson family and Syle family shared PEC mission house at Hongkou.  
Day-School and preaching place not in obvious position for passers-by.
- 1856, July 2. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1084  
Visit to girls day-school.  
Chinese women and hair dressing.  
Pastoral care.  
Difficulty of teaching older Chinese women.  
Chinese—three souls and six animal spirits.  
School vacation.  
Severe limitations of rote learning.  
All Protestant missions report poor attendances.  
Changes of “unsuitable” Chinese names for new scholars.  
Difficulty of the concept of “repentance” for Chinese enquirers.
- 1856, July 6. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1086  
Problems for uneducated Chinese to understand Christianity.  
Use of foot-pumped organs, or melodeons.  
Seating in Mission Church.  
Evangelical terminology. “Table” not “Altar.”  
Summary of sermon by Rev. Tong Chu Kiung.  
Administration of the Eucharist. Fellowship of foreign and Chinese.  
Applicants for Communion Alms.  
Case of man mutilated to improve begging opportunities.  
Girls’ School.  
Visit to secure return of former baptized scholar. Lack of response.  
Girls diverted by passing procession.  
Arrival of mail from America.  
Visit by Rev. Tong Chu-kiung.  
Need for him to preach louder.  
Tong explains idol procession. Prayers for rain.  
Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) explains procession for rain is linked to Daoist beliefs. Extortion by priest over rain punished
- 1856, September 1-23. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1091  
Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting.  
Episcopal day-school opened in former CMS school.  
Objections to foreign “immoral” art-works, especially French engravings.  
Visit of Dr. Samuel Wells Williams, ex-missionary now Secretary to U.S. Legation.  
Concern about social and political confusion restricting evangelism.
- 1856, September 26  
to November 29. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1092  
Acting Organist at Church of Our Saviour.  
Chinese hymnology. Syle’s assessment of Chinese music.  
Scholar Yang He-ding returns from US.  
Boys’ School. Examination of scholars without presence of Chinese teacher.  
Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting. Theme—missionary schooling.  
Visit from James Hudson Taylor and Rev. William Burns (English Pres).  
Pastoral work.  
Blind man supported by Chinese merchant—good deed to overcome evil.  
Visits Rev. Henry Reeve and school of the Church Missionary Society.  
New boys day-school at Christ Church. Boys “a dull set.”

- Carpet in Christ Church chancel stolen.  
 Debates communion alms with enabling blind to earn their own living.  
 Establishes string factory in Methodist Episcopal preaching place.  
 Syle and McCartee (Ningpo American Presbyterian) visit sick woman.  
 Reduces singing training due to throat soreness.  
 War in Canton—Bogue forts.  
 Visits man suspended from Communion—“visit a change of perplexities.”
- 1856, October 6. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1095  
 Day-school teacher becomes a Christian.
- 1856, October 6. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1096  
 Foreign Committee requires missionaries to keep a daily journal.  
 Language learning with Rev. Channing M. Williams. Advisor Rev. C. Keith.  
 Boys’ School. Examinations English language class performs well.  
 Attends service at Holy Trinity Anglican Church.  
 Support for British initiative for seamen’s “Bethel.”  
 Chinese idol procession to ameliorate drought.  
 Apology from officials for failure to “conciliate Heaven.”  
 Preaching engagements in English. Visits to villages near Shanghai.  
 Tracts distributed.
- 1856, October 6. **Southern Episcopalian.** Private Letters. 1098  
 Civil war among Taiping.  
 Plague of Locusts.  
 Arrival of beggars in Shanghai from country districts.
- 1856, October 17. **Miss Caroline Jones. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1099  
 Pastoral work. Distinction between “believing” and true repentance.  
 Behaviour of foreign seamen in Shanghai. Contempt of Chinese.  
 Chinese merchant prospers through supplying foreigners.  
 Foreign children and “Amahs.”  
 Foreign preoccupation with personal cleanliness.  
 Indian Parsees in Shanghai.  
 Chinese aware of job vacancies in mission.  
 Bishop ill-paralysis.  
 Chinese clothing. Impropriety of “foreign flowered” cloth.  
 Social gatherings.  
 Pastoral work. English language reading and enjoyment.  
 More about Indian Parsees (*Chinese Repository*, Vol 10 cited).  
 Visits to Chinese friends.  
 Discussion of impending marriage of Girls’ School scholar Seur-Yuen. to  
**Rev. Tong Chiu Kiung.**  
 Meets Mrs. (Kit) Sy-Soong, a girl taken from Java by Miss Aldersey.  
 Meets Yung Wing. former student at Yale College.  
 Not impressed by Yung Wing’s views.
- 1856, October 20. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1103  
 Chinese language studies.  
 Foreign merchants building “Wills” bridge to Hongkou.  
 Tutoring of Boys’ School teacher Yang-he-ding.  
 Arrival of beggars in Shanghai from country districts.  
 Nelson starts services for foreign seamen at Church of our Saviour.  
 Chinese “Lynch” law and wickedness of officials.  
 Missionaries “shocked” by administration of Chinese law.  
 Visits Temple of the City God—Chen Huacheng, General in 1<sup>st</sup> Opium War.  
 Distributes tracts in temple.  
 Service at Seamen’s Bethel. Need for missionary to foreign seamen in Shanghai.  
 Marriage of Girls’ School scholar Seur-Yuen. to Rev. Tong Chiu Kiung.  
 All the Chinese ceremonies were observed, with the exception of  
 those which are idolatrous”

	Civil war among Taiping. Visits to villages near Shanghai. Tracts distributed. Assessment of village literacy. Courtesy and politeness of villagers.	
1856, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> China. Missionary appointments and retirements. Ordination of Rev. Tong Chu-Kiung as Deacon. Disposition of missionaries in Shanghai. Statistics.	1107
1856, November 5.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams.</b> Language learning. Strong emphasis on memorization.	1109
1856, December 12 to January 1857.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams.</b> Cleaning up after a fire in old city. Views idol of god of literature. First inspection of an opium den. Boys' School—Leads morning prayers in Chinese for first time. New day-school and preaching place in nearby village of Sing-Zah. Visit to a village temple to Guandi-formerly headquarters of Imperial army. Rev. Cleveland and Mrs Caroline Tenney-Keith return to US. First service at Sing-Zah. Visit to City God Temple to observe ceremonies.	1109
1856, December 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Chinese with American experience and good English skills. Meets Chairman of the Hall of United Benevolence, Shanghai. Bishop visits blind workers institution. Reorganization of interior of Christ Church. Marriage of Girls' School scholar Seur-Yuen. to Rev. Tong Chiu Kiung. American merchant makes donation to Syle's Blind School. Mary Carter Nelson baptized. Variations in value of Carolus dollar. Revision of Chinese version of Morning Prayer service. Examination of a long-standing applicant for baptism. Real motivation to secure employment.	1112
1856, December 7.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> No one in attendance at service for foreign seamen. Capture of thief and recovery of goods stolen from Syle/Nelson house. Birthday party of a Nelson boy attended by other mission children. Destruction of preaching place at Wong Ko Mo Dur. Chinese friend brings son to Nelson for medical treatment. Importance of medical work in evangelism in China. Secures temporary preaching place. Poor attendances at Church of our Saviour. Renovations at temporary preaching place. Contract difficulties. Marriage of Girls' School scholar Seur-Yuen. to Rev. Tong Chiu Kiung. <b>Miss Fay</b> living alone. House warming party. Missionaries attend Tong's wedding feast. Style of begging. Christmas Day Holy Communion and party for missionary children. Girls' School Christmas observances. Girls receive dolls from Miss Haines' school in New York. Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) granted increase in salary. Rev. Tong Chu Kiung granted increase in salary. Monthly meeting of mission clergy established. Rev. Cleveland Keith arranges passage to America. New Year visits to foreign ladies in Shanghai.	1115

Rev. Tong Chu Kiung an excellent preacher.  
 More problems with Carolus dollar and pressure on mission finances.  
 Exchange rate fallen by two-thirds.  
 Chinese women gives birth to twins in nearby field.

## Part 13 Shanghai, 1857.

1121-1182

- 1857, January 1. **Foreign Missions Committee Epiphany Appeal.** 1122  
 Good financial receipts for 1856.  
 China Mission.
- 1857, January 5. **Bishop Boone.** 1123  
 “Deplorable situation”  
 Drought, locusts, Famine.  
 War in Canton with English and Americans.  
 Taiping rebellion; internal disputes at Nankin. (see below)
- 1857, January 5. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1124  
 Taiping rebellion; internal disputes at Nankin—detailed report.
- 1857, January 21. **Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1127  
 Girls’ Boarding School. Examinations  
 Bishop Boone’s Bible Class resumes.  
 Day-School. Prevalence of skin-disease.  
 New scholars are one third of attendees. 25 enrolled.  
 Girls’ Boarding School. Reading/writing in romanized local dialect.  
 Day-School. Adult learners.  
 Visits house of Rev. Tong Chui Kiung and wife.  
 Day-School. Older women give answers without understanding question.  
 Women celebrate Miss Conover’s birthday.
- 1857, February 29. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1130  
 Dupont a member of the Board of Missions.  
 Syle suggests that the Board of Missions policy is ad hoc.  
 Need for PEC Missionary College, [comparable to CMS Islington.]  
 Need for greater emphasis on missionary schools with support from a  
 distinct PEC Schools Society.  
 Bishop William Stevens had conception of missionary policy.  
 Bishop McIlvaine has great influence.
- 1857, February 18. **The Courier, Hobart, Tasmania**—Japan and its Two Sovereigns. 1131  
 Spiritual ruler—Mikado [Emperor]. Secular ruler—Shogun.
- 1857, March 6. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1134  
 Journal to end of 1856.  
 Visits house of Rev. Tong Chui Kiung and wife.  
 Bishop Boone’s remarks on allocation of duties of Syle and Chui Kiung.  
 Industrial school for blind.  
 Pastoral care to sick, poor, impotent...
- 1857, March 6. **Miss Caroline Jones. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.** 1137  
 Girls’ School. Chinese New Year vacation.  
 Two girls who “abandoned” the school.  
 Marriage of Rev. Tong Chui Kiung to Seur-yuen.<sup>37</sup>  
 Mother insisted on observing “harmless” Chinese marriage customs.  
 Foreign ladies invited to the wedding.  
 Mission church overcrowded for wedding.  
 Traditional weeping of females.  
 The red bridal sedan chair.  
 Chinese music.  
 Tong and various expected presents.

37 See summary of Chinese marriage customs online 1 July 2013 at —  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chinese\\_marriage](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chinese_marriage)



	Wedding Feast.	
	Bride's wedding dress.	
	Betrothal and the "eight characters."	
	Betrothal Customs.	
1857, March 11.	<b>Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.</b>	1140
	Girls Day-School in old city. Enrolment increased to 28 girls.	
	Slow learning.	
	Translation of English language children's book to romanized dialect.	
	Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting. Membership changes regularly.	
	Miss Conover's birthday observance.	
	Instructing two women enquirers.	
	Bishop Boone, sick leave in US.	
1857, May 15.	<b>Bishop Boone leaves for US on Sick Leave.</b>	1142
1857, June 29.	<b>Miss Emma Jones and Mr. John T. Points</b> arrive in New York.	1142
1857, July 5.	<b>Miss Jeannette R. Conover. Missionary Work of Female Assistants.</b>	1142
	Girls Day-School in old city. Visits mother of Rev. Tong Chu-kiung.	
	Rope-making from fibres of palm trees from Fujian Province.	
	Visit to Mrs. Lowrie's Presbyterian Day-School near South Gate.	
	Visits mother of Rev. Tong Chu-kiung.	
	First foreigner Tong's mother had seen.	
	Bishop Boone reported at Angier, NW Java.	
	Son born to Rev. Edward W. and Mrs. Syle.	
	Thief caught robbing Syle and Nelson house.	
	First English evening service in Church of Our Saviour.	Blin
	Visits American Baptist Mission.	
	Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting.	
	Serious flooding around Shanghai.	
	Chinese funeral procession.	
1857, July 7.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b>	1146
	Itineration with Rev. Channing Williams.	
	Distributes books and tracts.	
	Mild resistance from local literati.	
	Idol procession in Shanghai.	
	Baptism of Rev. Wong Kong Chai's mother-in-law—close to death.	
	Preached at Holy Trinity Anglican Church.	
	LMS Missionary Williamson obstructed in obtaining housing.	
	Regular services in two villages.	
1857, August.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1148
	Boys' School Reunion in Miss Fay's rooms.	
	Former student (24 yrs old) returns from Jamaica and England.	
	Chinese printing of Confucian children's primers.	
	Distribution of books and tracts to Shantung men (tribute boat crews).	
	Bimonthly Episcopal mission meetings.	
1857, August.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	1149
	Full description of mourning arrangements for silk merchant's wife.	
	Explanation of term "joss" as in "joss-house."	
	Day-school and preaching place.	
	Penitential thief pilgrimage.	
	Beggar woman with tongue cut out.	
1857, August.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b>	1150
	Baptism of Rev. Wong Kong Chai's mother-in-law—close to death.	
1867, August 28.	<b>Bishop Boone and family arrive in New York.</b>	1150
1857, September.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b>	1151
	Prediction of protracted struggle with England and readjustment of treaties.	
	Boys' School. Annual Examination. Forty-one boys enrolled.	
	Boys' School. Use of Shanghai dialect. Chinese classics.	

	Boys' School. <b>Miss Fay's leading role..</b>		
	Boys' School. Curriculum.		
	Itineration and pioneering evangelism. Liggins and Williams.		
	Edkins LMS; Burden CMS; Aitcheson ABCFM.		
	Reeve CMS; Hobson, British Chaplain; retire due to ill-health.		
1857, September 1.	<b>North China Herald. Protestant Missions in China.</b>	1152	
	Total number and categories of Protestant missionaries.		
	More than twenty mission boards or associations.		
	Foreign Missionary Statistics.		
	Shanghai. 22 ordained men; 3 physicians; 1 layman; 4 unmarried women; 16 married women; 25 children. Total 71.		
	Ningpo. 16 ordained men; 17 women, 26 children.		
	Fuh-chau (Foochow-Fuzhou), 7 men, 3 ladies, 10 children.		
	Hong Kong and Macau. 22 missionaries, 18 ladies, 20 children.		
	Total— 237 foreign missionary personnel. Others on leave.		
	The Work of Missionaries and Impact on Chinese		
	Model Missionaries named.		
	Overcoming Chinese official and other obstacles.		
	First Opium War and impact on foreign Protestant missions.		
1857, September 6.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1155	
	Meets Chinese man [A-ne] from San Jose, California.		
	Importance of Mandarin Colloquial for missionaries.		
	Meets Jewish teacher from Jerusalem Anglican mission, via Calcutta and Shanghai. Hoped to use him to teach Episcopal deacons Hebrew.		“A I
	Baptism of Rev. Wong Kong Chai's mother-in-law—close to death.		
	Claims to secular authority of Catholic bishops.		
	Visit of Rev. E Wentworth of Methodist Episcopal Mission, Foochow.		
	Syle reflects on advantages of combined Protestant Mission, rather than denominational missions.		
	Recent typhoon—risks to returning missionaries.		
	Reflections on acceptance of Chinese traditions at Christian weddings.		
	Liggins and Williams itinerations.		
	Formation of Literary and Scientific Society.		
	(Later the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Socy).		Dea
1857, September 20.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams.</b>	1157	
	Baptisms at Christ Church.		
	Liggins and Williams itinerations.		
	Preaching in City God Temple Soochow [Suzhou].		
	Distribution of Bibles and Tracts.		
	Visit Daoist temple at Choong-loong mountain.		
	Stopped at Customs barrier. Official prohibits journey-for fear of punishment by superiors.		
	“A well-ordered city. [Voo-sih]		
	Discussion with elderly Buddhist priest in temple.		
	Another itineration tour. Liggins ill.		
	Other missionaries in district. LMS, CMS, ABCFM.		
1857, October 1.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b>	1161	
	Baptisms. Baptism of Rev. Wong Kong Chai's mother-in-law.		
	Itineration tour to the west of Shanghai.		
1857, October 1.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b>	1161	
	Death of Arthur Syle.		
	Williams and Liggins—itineration.		
1857, October.	<b>PEC Board of Missions. Annual Meeting</b>	1161	
	Affirms importance of China mission.		
	Married missionary stipend \$1000. Exchange rate devalues to \$500.		

1857, October.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b> Annual Meeting. Foreign Missions Committee. Resignation of Rev. P. P. Irving.	1162	
1857, October.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Annual Report. Bishop Boone in US. Continuing ill-health. Proposed deputation tour. Exchange rate losses serious drain on funds. Linked to war with Britain. Freedom of travel for missionaries. Letter of Rev. Robert Nelson dated June 27. Return of Rev. Cleveland and Mrs. Keith to US. Arrived New York 1 May. China mission statistics.	1162	
1857, October 14.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Annual Report. Long-term ill-health. Living at Orange, New Jersey. Diocesan problems from an absent bishop. Formed a Diocesan management committee before leaving Shanghai. Numbers always too small to form Diocesan Standing Committee. Impact of civil and foreign wars in China. Improved freedom of missionary movement in China. General report on mission in Shanghai. Syle's industrial school for the blind. Rev. Cleveland and Mrs. Keith ill, return to US. Rev. John Liggins and Rev. Channing M. Williams ordained priests [Jan1]. China mission statistics.	1165	
1857, November 3.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Recreational visit to Hangchow cancelled due to serious illness of <b>Miss Fay</b> . Party of 3 men, 4 women, six children. Growth of foreign community in Shanghai. Cost of living increases. Applications for baptism increasing. Syle refuses to become involved in "political" or local official affairs. Teaches Anglican chants in CMS Boys' School. Robbers attack Rev. Wong Kong Chai's house. Protestant Missionary Conference—the Millennium and work of missions. Industrial School for blind. Support from foreign community. Chinese Christian teachers, preachers meeting poorly attended. Birth of son of Rev. Tong Chu Kiung. US naval officer advises possibility of residence for Americans at Hadodate. Bishop Boone arrived safety in US. Another Syle child sick. Arthur and Walter dead previously. Episcopal Committee endorses Williams and Liggins itineration travels. Baptism of poor leper boy in rural village.	1167	Lite
1857, November 4.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Welcomes Dupont to "China Waters." Invites Dupont to be godfather of new Syle child, named "Louis Dupont." Syle family visits Hangchow, no obstructions from officials.	1170	
1857, November 20.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Report of itineration, hopefully to establish a new mission station. A week's journey to Lake Taihu via Suzhou took six days. Returned due to illness. Five days to reach Shanghai. Williams resumes itineration. Complete freedom of movement. No obstacles to distribution of tracts. Missionaries wear foreign dress without difficulties. Hope that Suzhou will become mission station. Visit to temples in and near Suzhou. Williams visited 12 towns and five walled cities. Distributed tracts, etc. Missionaries take recreation leave.	1170	

- 1857, November 23. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1171  
 Consul-General [US Commissioner] Harris signs agreement with Japan.  
 Welcome to China.
- 1857, November 30. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1172  
 Offers Dupont on-shore accommodation in Syle's house.  
 USS Minnesota needs to show US flag in Yangtse region.  
 Highlights regional differences in China.  
 Missionaries have their biases as do other foreigners.  
 Missionary isolation—deaths of family members at home.
- 1857, December 1. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1174  
 Need of an Episcopal hospital in Shanghai.  
 Preparation of metrical psalms in Chinese.  
 Literary and Scientific Society. [later N China branch, Royal Asiatic Society]  
**Mrs. Nelson** persuades officials to provide warm clothing for poor.  
 30 or 40 of blind included.  
 War continues in Canton (Guangzhou).  
 Christmas services.  
 Public execution of seven criminals.  
 Poor foundations require repairs to Christ Church.  
 Liggins and Williams return and depart.
- 1857, December 4. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1175  
 Advises anchoring Minnesota at Woosung.
- 1857, December 4. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1177  
 Domestic items.
- 1857, December 18. **Bishop Boone. Letter in the Church Journal, New York.** 1177  
 Addresses clergy conference in Charleston SC. China Mission.  
 Currency conversion problems. Carolus dollars in short supply.  
 Missionary receives \$600 but costs Board of Missions \$1000,  
 i.e., 40% loss.  
 Summary of mission achievements. Risk of withdrawal always present.  
 China's internal political disturbances.  
 Ordinary Chinese tolerant. Officials intolerant.
- 1857, December 23. **Rev. Dr. William Sparrow to Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1160
- 1857, December 31. **Rev. Cleveland Keith.** 1180  
 Visits sick family (Wong) seeking baptism but "suspicious" about motives.  
 Absence of genuine repentance. Man an opium addict. Wife supplied drug.  
 Revision of four Gospels—standardization of phraseology.  
 Dr. Fish attracting many sick Chinese for treatment.  
 Theft of all day-school teachers property including bedding.  
 (Mrs) Wong again seeks baptism and is refused.  
 Poor leper boy (see above 1857, November 3. Rev. Edward W. Syle.)

## **Part 14 Shanghai and Japan, 1858.**

**1183-1286**

- 1858, January **Bishop Boone.** Shanghai Diocesan Administration. 1184 Dep  
 Uncertainty over return—ill-health.  
 Conditions in China.  
 Boys' School—"great pains and diligence of **Miss Fay**.  
 9 boys request baptism.  
 Girls' School—  
 14 girls request baptism.  
 Church of Our Saviour unsuitable for evangelistic preaching.  
 Bishop notes he has sent monthly letters to the Committee.  
 Translations. Gospels. Missionaries vocabulary too limited.  
 Local Shanghai dialect—"the language of the heart."
- 1858, January 3. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1187 Chir  
 Rev. Wong Kong Chai [Huang Guangci]. Liggins, Williams itinerant visits.

- Syle—chronic throat weakness.  
Canton captured by French and British.  
Financial crisis in US.<sup>38</sup>  
Liggins and Williams return to Shanghai.  
Revision of Chinese form of Service of Morning Prayer.  
Liggins and Williams request permanent posting as itinerants.  
Visit to Episcopal mission by Dr. Peter Parker, physician from Ningpo.  
Wedding between Chinese students.  
Nelson takes Mission church and Shanghai city.  
Syle takes Christ Church and area outside city.  
Blind Institution.  
Irregular attendance at boys' day-school.  
Chinese New Year. Boys' School vacation. Examination.  
Other Protestant missions do not favour teaching English to Chinese.  
Chinese teacher baptized.  
Girls' School examinations.
- 1858, January 7. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1150  
Domestic matters.  
US Vice-Consul Knapp resigns—"intemperate habits."
- 1858, January 17. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1190  
Canton Commissioner Yeh captured at Canton.  
Trade between Shanghai and Pechele.  
China cedes Heilongjiang to Russia.  
Starvation among Manchu forces in Beijing.
- 1858, January 30. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1191  
Itinerancy to west of Shanghai.  
Freedom of movement but officials oppose renting of houses to foreigners.  
Freedom to reside temporarily in boats at towns.  
River travel by hired passenger boats. Description and cost.  
Itinerant visits. Mornings study, afternoons preaching and distributing tracts etc.  
Books and Tracts detailed.  
Method of distribution.  
Usually visit the Temple of the local City God and preach.  
People very polite.  
Chinese attitude to, and assessment of, foreigners.
- 1858, February. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1194  
Financial Troubles.  
Challenge of materialism.
- 1858, February 5. **Rev. John Liggins.** City of Dzang Zok.<sup>39</sup> 1195  
Important city of Soong Kong [Sung Kiang).  
Arrival at Dzang Zok. Chinese willing to listen to preaching.  
Impact of tract "The Two Friends" on a literary man from Beijing.  
Request for Christian books from ex-mandarin, second degree holder.  
Refused permission to rent rooms in Temple of Universal Benevolence.  
Rented three rooms in inferior Temple of the Verdant Mount.  
Liggins returns to Shanghai. Williams remains in Dzang Zok.  
Williams expelled by officials from Temple of Verdant Mount.  
Returns Shanghai.
- 1858, February 6. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1199  
Episcopal Mission receiving copies of the *Church Journal* from New York.

38 "Panic of 1857." Online 1 July 2012 at — [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panic\\_of\\_1857](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panic_of_1857) This was the first world-wide economic recession and continued until c1861.

39 A 20C account of a young foreigners life in Dzang Zok is: Smith, Huston, *Tales of Wonder: Adventures Chasing the Divine: An Autobiography*, (New York, HarperOne, 2008.) See also Smith, H, online 1 July 2103 at — <http://www.newworldlibrary.com/ArticleDetails/tabid/230/ArticleID/262/Default.aspx>

Mission—”great expensiveness & inadequate results.”

Details major challenges confronting the China Mission.

- a. Chinese character.
- b. Chinese culture.
- c. Chinese manners.
- d. Chinese morals.
- e. Chinese language.

Incidental challenges.

- a. Inadequate staffing.
- b. Local unrest, e.g. the Triad occupation of Shanghai.
- c. Want of interest and support and cooperation from America.
  - Lack of parish support.
  - Few readers of *Spirit of Missions*.
  - Insufficient and interrupted funding from America.

Mission Achievements.

1858, January 24.	<b>US Commissioner William B. Reed to Lord Elgin</b> —conquest of Canton.	1202
1858, February 4.	<b>Lord Elgin</b> provides foreign representatives with copies of diplomatic correspondence with Chinese Commissioner Yeh re Canton.	1202
1858, February 6.	<b>Lord Elgin</b> notes Commissioner Reed’s letter re moving north (ie., Shanghai).	1202
1858, February 9.	<b>Lord Elgin</b> notes Reed has promised “to cooperate cordially” with British. Elgin states that Americans “only people likely to give trouble.”	1202
1858, February 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> USS Portsmouth—US Navy officer’s letter from Hakodate. US Consul-General, Mr. Townsend Harris. USS San Jacinto. Gains concessions from Japanese Government, Granted free movement in Japan. Right of residence for Americans in specified locations. Extra-territorial rights. Convention to come into effect July 4, 1858. Conversion to Christianity remains punishable by death in Japan. Japanese elite anxious to learn English. Opening for schools. Openings for careful mission work—essential to learn Japanese first. The Mikado-Emperor.	1203
1858, February 27.	<b>Yung Wing to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Offer of rented house to US Commissioner Reed.	1205
1858, February 27.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Offer of rented house to US Commissioner Reed.	1206
1858, February 28.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Daily routine. Foreign seamen-behaviour. Changed character of Hongkou. Catholic priests visit Boys’ School—regular occurrence. Distribution of books and tracts. Mixed race Chinese boy–father seaman. Mixed foreign population of Shanghai. Negotiations to end ‘all outstanding difficulties’ at Canton. Christ Church—Communicants 20, all poor and ignorant people. Boys’ School, (40 boys) and Girls’ School (40 girls). Curriculum.	1206
1858, March 1.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Formal courtesy visit from former student, now 24 years old —erratic lifestyle. Dzang Zok—Williams and Liggins—local opposition. Rev. Samuel R. Gayley, American Presbyterian missionary. Nelson, Gayley and Syle visit Woosung (Main anchorage for Shanghai).	1208

Shir

PEC

	Pastoral visiting. LMS missionary practising dubious baptisms. Nelson and Syle work on revision of Episcopal Holy Communion Service. Official in Hangchow officially forbids entertainment of foreigners. Chinese labourers reaction to foreign observance of Sunday as day of rest. Visits USS Minnesota and Captain Dupont. Meets U S Commissioner William B. Reed. Itinerant visit, distributes books and tracts, preaches in Benevolent Temple. Forbidden to speak by Dr. Burton, Southern Baptist Mission.		
1858, March 4.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay to Bishop Boone.</b> Boys' Boarding School. 1. Supervision of premises and buildings, repairs. 2. The domestic department. "Boys fed and clothed after a fashion." 3. After hours care of boys. "Cleanly look and upright bearing." 4. Serious illnesses including Miss Fay. 5. English language studies. Curriculum. 6. Chinese language studies. Curriculum. 7. Christian religious instruction. Curriculum. 8. General Department.	1211	Rec
1858, March 5.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Residence in Dzang Zok. Expelled from temple residence.	1213	
1858, March 9.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Character of Emperor. House offered to Commissioner Reed—formerly US Consulate.	1214	Rare
1858, March 13.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> General items already discussed. Visit of Commissioner Reed. Repairs to damaged rudder of USS Minnesota. Shortage of suitable timber. Shore accommodation needed for recuperation of ship's doctor.	1215	
1858, March 18.	<b>Miss Emma G. Jones. Returns to China.</b> <b>Miss Ellen A. Bowers</b> of Pomfret, Connecticut, appointed teacher. Bowers withdraws due to ill-health, October 1858.	1215	
1858, March 23.	<b>Rev. John Liggins to Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Dzang Zok. Rented house from relatives of Wong family [Wong Ko Mo Dur]. Preach to family and friends in guest rooms of Toe family [above]. Offer of house withdrawn. A family property and others objected.	1215	
1858, April.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b> Lent and Easter Appeal. 1858, Two-thirds of Episcopal parishes contribute nothing to missions.	1217	
1858, April.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Extracts from private letters from China. [Syle] Diplomatic discussions over foreign presence in China. Lord Elgin demands that Chinese receive communications in English. Commissioner Reed "very agreeable." Brief note about Dupont. Repairs to rudder of USS Minnesota to take two weeks. [Anor] Lord Elgin inspects Protestant mission schools in Shanghai. Boys' School. Girls' School. Accompanied by Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong. US Commissioner Reed and Russian minister visit Protestant missions. Girls' School—"faces just as ugly as all other foreign gentlemen." Diplomats visit Protestant missions. Lord Elgin and Commissioner Reed endorse English in mission schools. Reed praises <b>Miss Fay</b> . Address to Lord Elgin by Protestant Missionaries, Shanghai, Ningpo. Lord Elgin's Response. Extraterritoriality and missions.	1218	

- 1858, April 2. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1221  
 Pastoral notes.  
 Arrival of Rev. John and Mrs. Collins, Church Missionary Society.  
 Rev. S. and Mrs. Martin (Presbyterian, Ningpo) return to US.  
 Nelson and Syle visit Lord Elgin at British Consulate.  
 Blind Institution. Making door mats from fibrous bark of coconut trees.  
 Protestant Missionaries Prayer Meeting led by Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.  
 Dzang Zok. Williams and Liggins return to Shanghai.  
 Visit to neighbouring town. Distributed tracts.  
 Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong, preaches at Church of Our Saviour.  
 “The only place in the world where the English and American Churches meet on entirely common ground, to find ourselves able thus to interchange ministerial offices with satisfaction.”  
 Syle joins committee to organise a police force for American settlement.  
 Syle joins Commissioner Reed on USS Mississippi to Gulf of Pechili.  
 Americans use British navigational charts.  
 USS Minnesota joins British, French Russian ships off the Pei-ho River.  
 River too shallow for major warships.
- 1858, April 13. ***New York Times. Events at Pei-ho River.*** 1224  
 “Americans stand aloof.”  
 Rev. W.A.P. Martin is interpreter for Commissioner Reed.  
 Reed offers to act as mediator between Chinese and foreigners.  
 Reed embarks on hired US steamer “Antelope” to enter Pei-ho River.  
 The complexities of diplomatic correspondence.  
 Character for China larger than names of foreign countries.  
 Chinese Commissioner attempts to split foreign powers.  
 Syle joins Reed to convey dispatch to Chinese Commissioner.  
 Commissioner Reed, Rev. W. A, P. Martin (interpreter),  
 Rev. Samuel Wells Williams (Assistant Commissioner),  
 Captain Francis Dupont (Assistant Commissioner), and other Americans, including Syle.  
 Describes Chinese officials and official dress.  
 Commissioner Reed’s negotiating style.  
 Core issue—foreign access to interior of China.  
 Chinese officials negotiating style.  
 Negativity of Chinese leading to armed hostilities.  
 Reed appoints Dupont to deliver President Pierce’s letter to Emperor.  
 Letter previously delivered but returned to Reed unopened.  
 British, French, Russians declare intention to storm the Taku forts.
- 1858, April 25. **Rev. Robert Nelson to Bishop Boone.** 1227  
 Syle on USS Minnesota.  
 Dzang Zok. Liggins and Williams.  
 Chinese responds to book distributed by Liggins or Williams—seeking help for son.  
 Efficiency of Chinese mail service.
- 1858, April 27. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1228  
 Dzang Zok. Rented large house outside west gate. Large guest hall.  
 Resident for three months. Uncertain length of stay.
- 1858, April 28. ***North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.*** 1229  
 Arrival of foreign warships.  
 Belligerent force consists of  
 Calcutta, Pique, Furious, Sampson, Cormorant, Nimrod,  
 Slaney and Coromandel—English—  
 the Audacieuse, Nemesis, two despatch steam-vessels, and three  
 Gun-boats—French.  
 The neutrals are the two American ships-of-war Minnesota



- and Mississippi, with the hired steamer Antelope  
and the Russian Steamer America.  
Shallow waters limit effectiveness of big warships.  
Chinese risk war.
- 1858, May 1. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1229  
Visit of officers of USS Minnesota.
- 1858, May 1-8. **Rev. Edward W. Syle. Peiho River, North China.** 1230  
Tour of locality by Minnesota ship's boat.  
Meet two Chinese soldiers near forts and ordered not to go further upstream.  
Chinese try to divide foreigners.  
Syle visits Russians and tells them that he is an Englishman.  
Boredom of Syle's day on USS Minnesota.  
US Commissioner Reed having some success in moderating British  
and French approach to negotiations with Chinese.
- 1858, May 8. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1231  
Dzang Zok selected after six months of itinerant travels. Important location.  
Rental of house through assistance of a senior visiting official.  
Need of additional missionaries.  
If Syle's trip to the north does not improve health, he may return to US.  
Liggins and Williams do not wish to work in Shanghai. Prefer "regions beyond."  
Shanghai unhealthy place to live.  
Dzang Zok healthier location.  
Wong, a candidate for ordination.  
Need for married layman to superintend Boys' School.  
Gender prejudice re **Miss Fay**.
- 1858, May 8. **North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.** 1234  
Intrusive intervention of "neutrals" i.e., Americans and Russians  
who will benefit from a war.  
Need for more shallow-draft gunboats.  
War will be "more advantageous and lasting than ... diplomacy alone."
- 1858, May 15. **North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.** 1234  
**Chinese negotiating style.**  
Activity of American and Russian diplomats.  
British and French prepare for war—now thirty warships.
- 1858, May 22. **North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.** 1235  
Activity of American and Russian diplomats.  
Chinese negotiating style—refuse to appoint senior official to  
lead negotiations
- 1858, May 27. **North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.** 1235  
USS Mississippi carries dispatches from Allied Ambassadors to Hong Kong.  
British and French attack and capture Taku forts.
- 1858, May 29. **North China Herald. Events at Pei-ho River.** 1235  
US Commissioner Reed questions authority of Chinese negotiator.  
Reed questions whether Emperor will receive President Pierce's letter.  
Demands answer on terms of equality.  
President Pierce's letter delivered by Captain Dupont.
- 1858, May 29. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1236  
British and French attack and capture Taku forts.  
Uneasy truce in Canton.  
Taiping uprising in Chekiang.  
Local rebels active.  
Russian demands for territory.  
Commissioner Reed goes to Japan with three missionaries in entourage.  
Dzang Zok work continuing without interruption. People interested.
- 1858, June 5. **North China Herald. American Treaty with Japan inaugurated 4 July.** 1238
- 1858, June 10. **Rev. Edward Syle to Captain Francis Dupont.** From HMS Cruiser. 1238

	Letter of Appreciation for journey on USS Minnesota. HMS Cruiser very comfortable with moveable screw propeller. Brief observations on recent diplomacy.	
1858, June 12.	<b>North China Herald.</b> Re HMS Cruiser.	1239
1858, June 21.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Syle back in Shanghai.	1239
1858, June 21.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Dzang Zok. Naval activities ceased at Pei-ho river. New negotiations with Chinese High Commissioner. Missionaries pursue free movement in interior of China. Dzang Zok-tension resulting from foreign attack on Taku forts. Foreign Missions Committee approved an Episcopal mission in Japan.	1239
1858, June 25.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Respect for US Navy and US Marines for conduct at Pei-ho River. Shanghai trade suffering. Canton fears English annexation. Syle's letters from Pei-ho returned to him undelivered.	1240
1858, June 16.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee and Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Not clear about details of new American Treaty with China.	1241
1858, July.	<b>Roman Catholic Missions.</b> Shanghai and adjoining districts. Seminary with 26 students for priesthood. Boys' College with 82 scholars, ten Chinese teachers, one European missionary. 328 country schools, 362 teachers, 4797 scholars. 1498 adult baptisms, 1580 catechumens. 7870 child baptisms. 4000 orphans.	1242
1858, July.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Resignation of Rev. J. B. Southgate.	1242
1858, July 16.	<b>London Times. U.S. Japan Treaty of Amity and Commerce.</b> Success of U.S. Consul-General, Mr. Townsend Harris after six months negotiations. Important concessions, including toleration of Christian faith (only for foreigners).	1242
1858, July 26.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b>	1243
1858, July.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Local merchants prefer Mexican whole silver dollars, not half dollars. Nelson and Syle visit Lord Elgin. Lord Elgin "distressed" at Chinese official ignorance. British request American naval charts.	1244
1858, July 28.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Finance problems.	1245
1858, July 28,	<b>U.S Relations with China.</b> Summary of Foreign Treaties with China. Eleven new Treaty Ports opened. Opening of Yangtse River to Chin-kiang. Freedom of travel in China to foreigners. Internal travel passports issued by Consuls. To control unruly foreigners. Silence on opium trade. "Paramount importance to foreign commerce."	1245
1858, August.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Episcopal Mission in Japan. Financial contributions requested.	1247
1858, August 3.	<b>Third American Treaty with Japan.</b> USN officer's letter from USS Powhatan. USS Powhatan at Shimoda. Arrival of US Consul-General Townsend Harris. Arrival of Japanese Vice-Governor of Shimoda. USS Powhatan sails for Kanagawa with guests on board. USS Powhatan anchors at Kanagawa.	1247

- Americans not permitted to land at Kanagawa.  
 Arrival of Japanese war-steamer Kankomaru with two Japanese princes.  
 Japanese princes visit USS Powhatan—  
 Cinano-no-Kami and Moriyama Einosuke.  
 Official signing of third Japan-America treaty by Harris and Moriyama.  
 Effectiveness of Consul-General Harris.  
 First Protestant religious service at Harris' residence in Japanese temple.
- 1858, September 15. **Rev. Edward W. Syle. With US Commissioner William B. Reed to Japan.** 1249  
 Boards USS Minnesota for recreational and health visit to Japan.  
 Ship sights coast of Japan after four days.  
 Anchors in Nagasaki Harbor. Magnificent scenery.  
 Desima [Deshima] Island. Dutch trading settlement for 200 years.  
 Visit from representative of Governor of Nagasaki.  
 USN Chaplain Henry Wood initiates English language class for  
 six young official interpreters.  
 Syle tours city of Nagasaki.  
 Dr. Samuel Wells Williams is official interpreter. Has some Japanese.  
 Syle contrasts Chinese with Japanese, favours Japanese.  
 Dutch officials in Deshima visit USS Minnesota.  
 Dutch providing some military training to Japanese.  
 Syle visits silk-dealers house.  
 Syle meets Japanese official interpreter— *Nalabyash Disayemon*.  
 Syle attends worship on USS Minnesota—  
 USN chaplains use Episcopal Prayer Book to conduct services.  
 Observes Japanese village temple worship.  
 Japanese more earnest than Chinese.  
 Syle ranks himself as a “Japan-smitten enthusiast.”  
 Syle accompanies Commissioner Reed to meet Governor of Nagasaki.  
 Governor welcomes Syle's proposal for a [missionary]  
 English-language school.  
 Governor visits USS Minnesota.  
 English-language proposal to be facilitated.  
 Syle seeks to visit Chinese quarter—  
 Japanese have severe restrictions.  
 USS Mississippi arrives from Hakodate—  
 conducted three English-language classes.  
 Mission field is open for Episcopal entry.
- 1858, September 16. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1255  
 Calls for more Episcopal missionaries in China  
 Residual impact of Taiping rebellion in Yangtse valley.  
 Syle in Japan.
- 1858, September 30. **Dr. Samuel Wells Williams to Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1257  
 Japanese have an historic distrust of Christianity.  
 Introduce Protestant Christianity to Japan through English teaching.  
 Urges immediate Protestant missionary effort in Japan.  
 Williams has visited Japan four times and knows the language.  
 Respects Japanese people and “aptitude for learning.”
- 1858, October. **PEC Board of Missions. 23<sup>rd</sup> Annual Meeting.** 1258  
 Foreign Committee agrees to Japan, if men and money are available.
- 1858, October. **PEC Board of Missions. 23<sup>rd</sup> Annual Meeting.** 1258  
 China Mission—all barriers to evangelism removed.  
 Time for more Episcopal missionaries and money.  
 Education programs succeeding.  
 Success of Liggins and Williams inland itineration.  
 Bishop Boone's health improved, soon to return to China.

- 1858, October. **Foreign Missions Committee. Report.** 1259  
 List of China missionaries.  
 Triumphalist statement about “opening” of China to Christianity.  
 China mission marked by evangelism and education.  
 Two Chinese ministers.  
 Success of Liggins and Williams inland itineration. Choice of Dzang Zok.  
 Problems of silver exchange rate lessened.  
 Bishop Boone’s health improved, soon to return to China.  
 Rev. Cleveland and **Mrs. Keith** health improved, soon to return to China.  
**Miss Emma G. Jones** returned to Shanghai after 18 months US leave.  
 China Mission Statistics.
- 1858, October. **Bishop Boone. Report.** 1262  
 Success of foreign negotiations with China.  
 No restrictions on movement of foreigners with consular passports.  
 Ambassadors to have access to Chinese Government in Beijing.  
 [Previous negotiations with Governors-General in provinces.]  
 New treaty ports.  
 Favourable comments about missionaries by senior Chinese officials.  
 Continuing shortage of ordained missionaries inhibiting growth.  
 Only Syle and Nelson in Shanghai.  
 Only Liggins and Williams outside Shanghai. Welcomed by people.  
 Hill-stations offer recuperative option, rather than return to US.  
 Deacons Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci) and Tong Chu Kiung working well.  
 Boys’ and Girls’ Schools full. English language teaching endorsed.  
 Male superintendent needed for Boys’ School.  
 Syle caring for blind.  
 Girls’ School. **Miss Emma G. Jones** returning.  
 Rev. Cleveland Keith well but **Mrs. Keith** still unwell.  
 China Mission Statistics.  
 Bishop Boone’s health ‘much improved.’  
 Appeal for more missionaries.  
 Bishop Boone and Yan Yoong Kiung warmly received at Kenyon College.  
 25 minute address exhausted Bishop Boone.
- 1858, October 14. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1265  
 Freddie Syle wants to visit ship.  
 News of mission personnel.  
 Gifts.
- 1858, October 22. **Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong, to the Archbishop of Canterbury.** 1267  
 Observations on the recent Chinese Treaties and Christianity in China.  
 More opportunities for missionaries.  
 Russia and America warned Chinese of war with France and Britain.  
 Foreigners have unlimited access to China.  
 Protestant Christianity in Chinese = The Religion of Jesus.  
 Catholic Christianity in Chinese = Religion of the Lord of Heaven.  
 All Christians to be officially protected.  
 All previous official anti-Christian decrees null and void.  
 Internal passports not to be used to contact Taiping rebels.  
 Opium trade ignored in treaties—expediency dominated.  
 Welcomes end of East India Company—major source of opium in China.  
 British and American treaties with Japan expressly prohibit opium.  
 Christian aspects of treaties encouraged by US Commissioner Reed  
 and missionary assistants in US delegation.  
 Six Anglican missionaries in all of China.  
 Importance of official British chaplaincies.  
 Protestant missionary efforts in China—little progress and poor results.  
 “I know by experience the mental sickness of hope long deferred.”

- 1858, October 22. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1274  
 Syle's visit to Japan, an opening for new missionary effort.  
 Need for great sensitivity in introducing Protestant Christianity to Japan.
- 1858, October 22. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1275  
 Obligated to Capt. Dupont [previous friendship in Wilmington.]  
 Indebted to Commodore Tatnall [USS Mississippi.]  
 Appreciated kindness of US Commissioner William Reed.
- 1858, October 31. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1275  
 Experience on journey from Woosung to Shanghai.  
 Syle's family comfortable despite delayed arrival in Shanghai.  
**Mrs. Nelson** critically ill.  
**Miss Fay** overwhelmed by twice dining with Lord Elgin.
- 1858, November 6. **Missionary Correspondence with US Commissioner, Hon. Wm. B. Reed.** 1276  
 Letter from our [American] Missionaries to our Minister in China.  
 Congratulations on success of treaty negotiations.  
 Foreign residents relief at avoidance of war with China.  
 Importance of American official support for missionary citizens.  
 Reminder of importance of missionary assistance to American officials.  
 "From our ranks have been drawn...interpreters."
- 1858, November 6. **Mr. Reed's Answer** 1277  
 Advised US authorities of "high obligations to the American missionaries."  
 Good behaviour of American missionaries in China.  
 Could not agree that American Treaty should give distinct privileges to  
 missionaries.  
 All Americans in China to enjoy the same privileges.
- 1858, November 22. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1278  
 Family illness required period of recuperative leave at hill-station.  
 Journey by river boat. Curiosity of Chinese to see foreign  
 women and children.  
 Missionaries in Shanghai region have long had complete  
 freedom of movement.  
 Chinese officials more cooperative.  
 Opium.  
 Visit to Liggins and Williams at Dzang Zok.  
 Japan.  
 Syle welcomes discussion about avoiding Protestant missionary overlaps.  
 Expresses personal doubt about achieving such a goal.
- 1858, November 22. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1279  
**Mrs. Nelson** gives birth to baby girl.  
 Ships going up the Yangtse River frequently going aground.
- 1858, December 1. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1280  
 Rev. J. B. Southgate, Diocese of Maine, appointed missionary to China.  
 Treasury overdrawn. Contributions urgently needed.
- 1858, December 6. **Rev. John Liggins.** 1280  
 Eight months at Dzang Zok.  
 Services every Sunday and Wednesday morning.  
 Mostly open air preaching—every other day.  
 Sought a large room for city preaching place.  
 Two preaching places elsewhere.  
 Preached and distributed tracts to thousands.  
 No conversions.  
 Liggins Chinese teacher, Wong-Yoong-Fe, candidate for ordination.  
 Receiving five hours daily of language teaching from another teacher.  
 Wong-Yoong-Fe working as catechist.
- 1858, December 6. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1281  
 Apologises for poor correspondence.

- Syle preaching again without ill-effect.  
 Refers to French reports on treaty negotiations.  
 Dupont requests regular mission statistical updates.  
 Nelson family to take leave in US. [Leave granted every seven years.]  
 Syle experiments with “ambrotype” photography.  
 Elgin expedition to Hang Kow [Hankow-Hankou].  
 American firm Russell & Co have sent two ships to Japan. Cheap silk.  
 Refers to Commissioner Reed’s reply to letter from missionaries.
- 1858, December 9. ***New York Journal of Commerce.*** 1282  
 USS Powhatan and USS Mississippi anchored at Shimoda.  
 Review of Catholic Christianity in Nagasaki.  
 Protestant Worship in Townsend Harris’ residence in Shimoda.  
 Harris refers to his instructions from Secretary of State, Marcy, ordering Harris:  
 “Obtain full toleration of the Christian religion in Japan,  
 and protection for all missionaries...”  
 Implies same instructions given to Reed in China.  
 Abraham Lincoln to the Shogun of Japan.
- 1858, December 29. ***Treaties with China, so far as they related to Christianity.*** 1286
- Part 15 Shanghai and Japan, 1859. 1287-1388**
- 1859, January 25. ***Samuel Schereschewsky to Rt. Rev. W. Whittingham, Maryland.*** 1288  
 Desire to be a foreign missionary.  
 Held informal discussion with Bishop Boone.
- 1859, February 4. ***Rev. Edward W. Syle.*** 1288  
 Sameness in missionary work.  
 Christmas 1858. Miss Emma Jones holds social function for all  
 Chinese members and scholars.  
 Success at Dzang Zok.  
 Nelson to US. Williams to Shanghai. Wong Kong Chai to Dzang Zok.  
 Wong Kong Chai purchases Chinese “degree” i.e. literati status.  
 Chinese interest in sacred music.  
 Taiping Rebellion in decline.  
 “Opening” of Japan.
- 1859, February 10. ***Rev. John Liggins.*** 1290  
 Visits Soochow [Suzhou] and Hangchau [Hangzhou].  
 Importance of Guanyin.
- 1859, March. ***Foreign Missions Committee.*** 1291  
 First Protestant Mission in Japan.  
 Statement on Japan Mission, in consultation with Bishop Boone.  
 At least two missionaries.  
 Rev. John Liggins and Rev. Channing Williams appointed.  
 Nagasaki to be mission location—recommended by Syle.  
 Missionary physician to be appointed as soon as possible.  
 Resolutions of Foreign Committee on Japan mission.
- 1859, March 8. ***Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan, Journal of Commerce. (1)*** 1292  
 Commodore Tatnall and USN officers meet Governor and  
 officials of Nagasaki.  
 Support for Townsend Harris.  
 Japanese preference for English language over Dutch.  
 Japanese misled by Dutch about world status of Netherlands.  
 Superiority of American squadron over all others obvious.  
 Visit of Americans, British, French from Pei-ho River battles.  
 All visitors English-speaking, emphasised language issue to Japanese.  
 Chaplain Wood appointed by Tatnall to conduct English language classes.  
 Protestant opportunity—memories of Catholic martyrs—Martyrs Hill.  
 Desima [Deshima] Island—Dutch trading point.

	“Russian Bazaar”—island for potential Russian trading point.	
<i>1860, May.</i>	<b><i>Occasional Missionary Paper—May, 1860—Japan.</i></b>	1297
	Original drawings of the city of Nagasaki.	
1859, March 11.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay. Work of Female Assistant Missionaries.</b>	1301
	Boys’ School.	
	1. General Supervision of the School Buildings and Premises.	
	2. Domestic Department.	
	3. Care of the boys out of school.	
	4. Care of the sick.	
	Curriculum	
	5. English Studies.	
	6. Chinese Studies.	
	7. Religious Instruction.	
1859, March 12.	<b>Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan, <i>Journal of Commerce.</i> (2)</b>	1303
	English language school established at Russian Bazaar.	
	Nine young men (18-25 years)—Governor’s interpreters.	
	Great courtesy of students, to Wood and each other.	
	Ambitious that language skill would accelerate promotion.	
	Frequent official Japanese visitors .	
	Japanese characters same as Chinese ( <i>kanji</i> (漢字) but language quite different.	
	Student names.	
	Students knew some Dutch and could read Roman characters.	
	Curriculum.	
	Mastering English sounds of Roman letters.	
	Linking ideas to words.	
	Arithmetic.	
	Geography.	
1859, March 16.	<b>Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan, <i>Journal of Commerce.</i> (3)</b>	1305
	Curriculum.	
	Algebra.	
	Astronomy.	
	Religion—Christianity—indirectly e.g. heavens above—cause & effect.	
	Folly of idol worship.	
	Observance of <b>Donati’s comet.</b>	
	English writing and composition.	
	Christianity and Japanese attitudes. Discussed in wider social context.	
	The Christian concept of the soul—death, ethics, concepts of God/Christ.	
	Origins of human race and explanation of physical diversity.	
	Universal human ‘brotherhood.’	
1849, March 29.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	1307
	Report of the Sub-Committee on China.	
	Treaties and changed opportunities for missionaries.	
	Episcopal jurisdiction in China.	
	Special appeal for finance for ten new missionaries.	
	Preference for ordained men, at least in deacon’s orders.	
1849, April 1.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	1309
	<b>Miss Conover arrives in US.</b>	
1849, April 1.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1309
	Girls’ School.—eight candidates for baptism.	
	Boys’ School—eighteen candidates for baptism.	
	Letter to Syle from a scholar in Boys’ School re baptism.	
1859, April 21.	<b>Bishop Boone: Covering letter to Occasional Paper #21, February 1859.</b>	1309
	Changed situation in China—opening for missionaries.	
	Large and wealthy congregations asked to fully sponsor a missionary.	
	Married man. Outfit \$450, passage \$600, salary \$1,000.	
	Single man. Outfit \$250, passage \$300, salary \$600.	

1859, April 21.	<b>Samuel Schereschewsky to Rt. Rev. W. Whittingham.</b> Missionary application proceeding. Ordination as deacon likely before going with Bishop Boone to China. (see above 1849, March 29).	1310
1859, April 27.	<b>Samuel Schereschewsky to Rt. Rev. W. Whittingham.</b> Episcopal canons on ordination.	1311
1859, May 3.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Rev. Cleveland and Mrs Keith sail for China.	1312
1859, May 20.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Rev. Robert and Mrs. Nelson arrive in US.	1312
1859, May 22.	<b>Bishop Boone (Charleston, SC).</b> Preaches at St. Phillip's Church. The Episcopal Mission in China. Diocese centred at Shanghai. Need for hill-station site for local leave.	1312
1859, May 23.	<b>Bishop Boone (Addresses Convention of Diocese of South Carolina).</b>	1313
1859, May 26.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Nagasaki. Suffered continuous illness during 18 months in China. Injured by local rioters at Dzang Zok. Property stolen. Mayor issued a proclamation: missionaries not to be troubled. Liggins joins Williams in Shanghai. Dr, McGowan advises recuperative leave in Japan, arrived Nagasaki, 2 May. Provided with house by Governor to teach English to Japanese interpreters. US-Japan Treaty not in effect until July 4—others refused housing. Letters from Bishop Boone and Foreign Committee received in Nagasaki advising of appointment of Liggins and Williams to Japan. Authorities only permit educational work. Liggins distributes “scientific works” prepared by missionaries in China. Need for missionary physician. “Thus has been commenced the <i>first Protestant Mission in the Empire of Japan.</i> ”	1313
1859, May 30.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams.</b> Departure for Japan delayed by sickness in Syle's family.	1316
1859, May 30.	<b>Master Henry Winter Syle.</b> Possibility of teaching Chinese deaf-mutes in Shanghai.	1316
1859, May 31.	<b>Hon. William B. Reed.</b> American Policy in China. Speech in Philadelphia. American neutrality. Conflict on the Pei-ho River. Negotiations with the Chinese Sino-American Treaty. Further negotiations with the Chinese	1317
1859, May 31.	<b>Hon. William B. Reed.</b> Paragraph about missionaries omitted from entry above.	1328
1859, June 9.	<b>Bishop Boone to Rt. Rev. W. Whittingham, re Schereschewsky.</b> Invites Whittingham to Schereschewsky's ordination in New York.	1329
1859, June 13.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Routine itinerancy. The freedom of travel will test attitudes of ordinary Chinese. Boys' School. 12 boys baptised. Foreign Negotiations with Chinese Government.	1330
1859, June 14.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.</b> Townsend Ward in Shanghai. Harris' health poor, strain of working alone for two years in Japan. Harris excessively pro-Japanese. Harris, a nominal Episcopalian, not interested in missions.	1330

Acc



- 1859, June 14. **Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan, *Journal of Commerce* (4).** 1331  
 Closure of English language school at Nagasaki.  
 Open for two months.  
 Excursions with students.  
 Visits sites of Catholic martyrs.  
 Language problems overcome with sign language.  
 Describing an organ and its operation.  
 Examples of compositions in English after two months instruction.  
 Syle in Nagasaki and provided books given to Governor and scholars.  
 Wood provided copies of the *Journal of Commerce* to Japanese officials.  
 Japanese Government printing establishment in Nagasaki.  
 Wood receives gifts from Governor of Nagasaki.
- 1859, June 14. **Rev. Edward W. Syle to Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USS Minnesota.** 1334  
 Liggins in Japan. Tutoring eight Japanese official interpreters.  
 3 room house provided by Governor.  
 Williams to leave for Japan soon.  
 Syle alone in Shanghai.
- 1859, June 14. **Rev. Dr. S. R. Johnson, General Theological Seminary to Bp Whittingham.** 1335  
 Ordination of S. I; J. Schereschewsky for China.  
 Ordination of five young men from Virginia Seminary for China.
- 1859, June 15. **Miss Lydia Mary Fay.** 1335  
 Boys' School. Twelve boys baptised by Syle at Christ Church.  
 Fay's emotional response over the twelve "brightest and best."  
 Fay's everyday life—"faint, but still pursuing."<sup>40</sup>  
 21 candidates but only 12 gave Syle "entire satisfaction."  
 Gambling was once common among boys, not so in 1859.
- 1859, July. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1336  
 Opening of China—God's providence.  
 Call for ten new missionaries.  
 Nine people appointed, including one woman.  
 \$30,000 needed including \$10,000 for interior stations; \$6000 received.  
 Bishop Boone's health affected by deputational preaching.
- 1859, July 4. **Commodore Joseph Tatnall.** 1337  
 Criticism of Tatnall breaching US neutrality by assisting  
 British at Pei-ho River.  
 No U.S. guns fired against Chinese.  
 Assistance to a "friendly and kindred" people.  
 Tatnall's account of Commissioner Ward's negotiations and USN support.  
 American presence at Pei-ho River requested by Chinese.  
 Chinese refuse to allow foreign Ministers entry to Tientsin [Tianjin].  
 Pei-ho River barricaded by Chinese.  
 Americans enter river in vessel without guns.  
 Chinese seeking conflict to void treaties of 1858.  
 American vessel runs aground—assisted by British gunboats.  
 Chinese official refuses permission for Americans to enter forts.  
 British prepare for assault. Americans withdraw.  
 Many soldiers and heavy gunfire from Chinese forts.  
 British gunboats aground. Admiral wounded & shifts flag three times.  
 British officer conveys unspoken appeal for American assistance.  
 Rescue of British boats approved by Minister Ward.  
 Americans took position to assist foreign wounded.  
 Six British vessels sunk by Chinese gunfire from forts.  
 British and French suffer 450 killed and wounded. On-third of total force.

---

40 Old Testament reference. Judges ch8 v 4 — Story of Gideon.

1859, June 25.	<b>American Poem in Praise of Commodore Tatnall.</b> “Blood is thicker, sir, than water, now as then.”	1341	
1859, July 7.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop Boone ordains five new missionaries for China-St Georges NY.	1343	
1859, July 7.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop and Mrs. Boone and twelve other missionaries sail for China.	1343	
1859, July 10.	<b>Rev. Samuel J. Schereschewsky to Bishop Whittingham.</b> Reports ordination and commitment to foreign missionary work.	1343	
1859, July 13.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Report of ordinations. Extended report in <i>Church Journal</i> .	1344	
1859, July 21.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Pastoral routine. Report from Blind Institution. Sees all Chinese communicants once a week. Rev. Tong Chu Kiang working at Christ Church. Rev. Wong Kong Chai [Huang Guangci] working at Dzang Zok. Wong Yoong Fee, candidate for orders, does general evangelistic work. “Continuance of commotion” allows little time for intellectual work.	1353	
1859, July 26.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Message at sea returning to China.	1355	
1859, August 1.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Foreign defeat at Pei-ho River arouses anti-foreign sentiment in Shanghai. Security force landed from foreign warships.	1355	
1859, August 10.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Japanese elite reaction—“obstructives”—to treaties. Japanese special silver trade coin valued at 33 instead of 100 cents. Liggins restricted to language study and distribution of books in Chinese. List of Chinese books by missionaries 1000 copies sold. Being reprinted by Japanese publishers. Foreign Missions Committee approves removal of mission to Kanagawa. Liggins anxious to distribute Bibles and tracts.	1355	
1859, August 16.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Christ Church attacked by “lewd fellows of the baser sort.” [Cantonese] Cantonese provide most domestic servants in foreign employment. “Canton anti-foreign animosity, always smouldering.” Overall reaction to Chinese defeat at Canton and foreign defeat at Pei-ho River. Some connection to Chinese anger over coolie trade. Mr. Lay, Inspector of Customs and Rev. John Hobson, assaulted. Syle has fears of Chinese uprising and murder of his family. Foreign security patrols. Christ Church and LMS chapel in old city damaged and property stolen. Assaults on other Protestant missionaries and Chinese Christians. Ningpo men on coolie vessel deny claims they were kidnapped. Chinese authorities act firmly to suppress disorder. Unrest on river between junkmen and sampanmen. Endless rumours.	1356	Viol
1859, August 27.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Difficult voyage from US. In South China Sea. Ship becalmed. <b>Mrs Keith</b> somewhat improved in health.	1359	
1859, August 27.	<b>The Spectator, England.</b> Extended report, “Glimpses of Japan.”	1360	
1859, September.	<b>Rev. Griffith John, London Missionary Society.</b> The Grand Canal Curiosity about foreigners. “Foreign Devil”—astonishment at blue eyes.	1360	Chir

	High quality manufactures of domestic goods. Placards everywhere. Chinese domestic religion. Ancestor worship.		
1859, September.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Mission to Japan.</b> Appointment of Liggins and Williams to Japan. Letter from Townsend Harris to a friend in Shanghai. Japanese passion for secrecy. Double translation. Diplomatic secrecy. Japanese will observe treaty obligations. Future of Christianity will depend on missionary conduct. All the Japanese elite read Chinese. No newspapers but books numerous and cheap. Japanese population literate.	1362	
1859, September.	<b>Rev. John Hobson, British Chaplain, Shanghai.</b>	1363	Rec
1859, September. 2	<b>Rev. Wong Kong Chai [Rev. Huang Guangci.]</b> Request for missionary doctor.	1363	
1859, September. 2	<b>Rev. Tong Chu Kiang.</b> Glad to hear of new missionaries. Request for missionary doctor.	1364	
1859, September 3.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> US-China treaty content published in US. Encouraged letters by Wong and Tong [above].	1364	Chi
1859, September 9.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Rev. Channing Williams arrived early July aboard USS Germantown. Cholera outbreak. Townsend Harris told of Foreign Committee's approbation.	1365	
1859, September 10.	<b>Rev. W. A. Russell, Church Missionary Society.</b> Pei-ho defeat weakens British prestige and security of missionaries. Anti-foreign placards. False story of foreign assaults on Chinese. Compensation sought from missionaries. Missionaries in great jeopardy. Pause in interior movements.	1365	
1859, September 20.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Fresh crop of ill-will-outcome of Pei-ho battle and Ningpo kidnapping. Christ Church reopened. Rev. Cleveland Keith to arrive shortly. Japan. Attempt to restrict foreigners to a distinct enclave at Kanagawa. Attempt to devalue silver by two-thirds. [see above]. Need to avoid exaggerations about Protestant mission work in Japan.	1367	
1859, September 30.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Speaks at St. George's Episcopal Church, New York. Common work of Anglican/Episcopal missions in China. Caution over expectations of work in Japan. Expresses respect for work of women missionaries.	1367	
1859, October 6.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Expresses concern that Pei-ho reverse might jeopardise support. Bridgman admits son of Lean Ah Fa to communion. Total Episcopal baptisms in Shanghai total 103.	1368	
1859, October 10,	<b>Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan.</b> Commodore Tatnall to return Japanese Ministers to Japan, via Panama. USS Powhatan sails to Jeddo [Tokyo] US Consulate in Nagasaki, 1 foreign ships. John Elliott Ward appointed 2 <sup>nd</sup> American Minister to Tokyo vice Harris.	1368	

	Description of Tokyo. Policy of the Japanese Government. Commodore Tatnall makes visit on shore. Tokyo an open city. No walls, no guns. Ample greenery, "Forest City." Walk around Tokyo. Japanese sedan chair. Imperial Castle [1859].		
1859, October 17.	<b>General Convention of Protestant Episcopal Church</b> , Richmond VA.	1372	
	Approves expansion of foreign missions. Japan to be under Episcopal jurisdiction of Missionary Bishop in China. Episcopal jurisdiction in China resolved. Anglicans-Chekiang, PEC-Kiangsu.		
1859, October 21.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1330	
	Arrival of Rev. Cleveland and <b>Mrs. Keith</b> from US. Future British policy towards China? Shanghai peaceful.		
1859, October 28.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1372	
	Mission to Japan recommended. Long-term Dutch presence suggests Dutch-speaking missionary. Syle's letter: Japan ready for foreigners. Japanese eager to learn English. No Dutch resident chaplain, nor was one likely. Syle impressed by Japanese.		
1859, November.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Annual Report.</b>	1373	
	Missionaries and Chinese staff in China. All of China open to Christian missionaries. Bishop Boone's health. Labours in the interior. Japan. Mission statistics.		List
1859, November.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Annual Report.</b>	1376	
	Nagasaki, Japan. Appointment of Dr. H. Ernst Schmid as missionary physician to Japan.		
1859, November.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	1378	
	Annual Report.		
1859, November 7.	<b>Rev. Henry Wood, Chaplain, USS Powhatan, <i>Journal of Commerce.</i> (45)</b>	1380	
	"Commerce and Christianity are not equivalent terms." English company seeks to start opium trade in Japan. Mt. Fuji [Fujiyama]. Yokohama foreign settlement.		Jedc
1859, November 7.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1382	
	New buildings at Hongku to accommodate new missionaries. US Minister Ward continues negotiations with Chinese officials. Many Americans pursuing secular employment in Shanghai. Syle wryly mentions that four of the Americans are sons of clergy.		
1859, November 23.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b>	1382	
	Return of Bishop Boone. No signs of unrest or hostility.		
1849, November 25,	<b>Mrs. Jane Edkins</b> , London Missionary Society.	1382	
	<b>Miss Fay</b> , a very accomplished woman.		
1859, December 20.	<b>Rev. Elliott H. Thomson.</b> <sup>41</sup>	1383	
	Welcome from Protestant missionaries. Christmas Day observed. Visits Christ Church in old city. Boys' School examination. Boarding schools "most promising work of our mission."		

---

41 Thomson spent more than 30 years with the Episcopal Mission in Shanghai.

	Attended confirmation service, 33 confirmed. Chinese New Year observances. Language study. Boys' School, English language Bible class.	
1859, December 20.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Buddhism in Japan.	1384
1859, December 21.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Arrived in Shanghai, 21 December. Journey of 161 days from New York. China at war with England and France.	1344
1859, December 21.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Safe arrival in Shanghai.	1386
1859, December 30.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Encloses letter from <b>Rev. W. A. P. Martin</b> , dated November 3. Christianity still banned in Japan. Sale of books only option for missionaries. Japanese people well-disposed to foreigners.	1386

## Part 16 Shanghai, 1860.

1389-1442

1860, January 5.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Death of Mrs. Syle, 28 December 1859. Associated with Boone and mission since 1845. Crowded missionary accommodation. Conditions in China uncertain. <i>A letter from a lady of the mission re Mrs. Syle.</i>	1390
1860, January 20.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Uncertainty about British policy in China. Wong Chung, [baptized cOctober 1848] interpreter abroad [Jamaica, London]; Interpreter to Lord Elgin, imprisoned by Chinese; Interpreter to Chinese officials at Pei-ho River episode;	1391
1860, January 21.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Triumphalist note that war will stimulate Christianity in China.	1391
1860, February 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Continuing uncertainty about British and French policy. Alterations and additions to accommodate new missionaries.	1391
1860, February.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Review of China Mission. Uncertain times— confident of mission outcomes.	1392
1860, February 18.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> A time of anxious expectation. Three warships leave Shanghai to survey Pei-ho River region. Schereschewsky living separately in old city— immersion language learning.	1392
1860, March 5.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Hope that war—China v England and France—will be averted. Outcomes may lead to greater opportunity for missions. Chinese war party in ascendancy. Bishop Boone has confirmed 35 Chinese since his return.	1392
1860, March 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Rumours of peaceful settlement spread but not confirmed. War likely—foreign troop reinforcements. Rejects “overbearing and violent conduct of our own people.”	1393
1860, March 13.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Retires from Nagasaki mission due to ill-health. Hopes to return. Much interest in Japan over visit to America and Europe of Japanese ambassadors. Residence of PEC Missionaries at Nagasaki, Japan.	1393

Duti

- 1860, March. Intelligence—Liggins arrives in England. **Rev. Channing Williams.** 1395  
 Request for another missionary for Japan—scholar in languages needed.  
 No immediate prospect of evangelistic missionary work.  
 Hope for positive outcome of visit of Japanese commissioners to US.
- 1860, March 16. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1395  
 Bishop of Victoria delivers “Charge to the Anglican Clergy,” in Shanghai.  
 Positive opportunities in China.  
 Anglican/Episcopal relations. No practical operational problems.  
 Informal agreement—Anglicans in Chekiang. Episcopal in Kiangsu  
 Impossible to make formal legal agreement.
- 1860, March 21. **Bishop Boone.** 1396  
 Rumours of kidnapping of Chinese by armed foreigners—untrue.  
 Arrival of foreign armies arousing local fears.  
 Chinese continue to regard foreigners as inferiors.  
 Foreigners creating unease in all of Asia.  
 Another mission member:  
 Growth American Settlement. Mission at Hongku no longer isolated.  
 Rumours of French kidnapers believed by Chinese!  
 Rev. S. R. Brown reports that foreigners are insecure but people friendly.  
 Continuing trouble with Taiping. French ready to attack rebels.
- 1860, March 16. **Rev. Henry M. Parker.** 1397  
 Preaching in English. Taking services in seaman’s chapel [Bethel].  
 Five hours daily in language study. Two to three hours street talking.  
 Reading good, speech poor.  
 Pursuing theological studies preparatory to being priested.  
 Welcomes challenge of missionary work.
- 1860, April 2. **Rev. Henry Purdon.** 1398  
 Unwearied attention required to learn Chinese language. Reli  
 No interest in Christianity.
- 1860, April 3. **Rev. Dudley D. Smith.** 1399  
 Residing with Rev. Edward Syle. Sorrow at death of Mrs. Syle.  
 Language study.  
 Letters from home frequent, with rumours of war.  
 Recent Taiping successes.  
 Chinese in Shanghai fear Taiping although foreigners promise to defend  
 the city.  
 Foreign troops expected.  
 Visits to temples. Told that Buddha manifested to the West in Christ.  
 Population density great, people industrious. Poverty widespread.  
 Ancestor worship.
- 1860, April 5. **Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky.** 1400  
 Acquiring the language the first priority of all missionaries.  
 Remarks about acquiring the Chinese language.  
 Need to be able to express Christian truths “intelligibly and clearly.”  
 Beware of excessive zeal without knowledge.  
 Anglican Articles recommend [XXIV] understandable language.  
 Missionaries need more than one Chinese language.  
 Many local dialects.  
 Complexity of Chinese grammar.  
 Tones and Inflexions.  
 Essential to know mandarin dialect.  
 Essential to know the literary or book language.  
 Missionaries need familiarity with Chinese literature.  
 Requires knowledge of many thousands of characters.  
 Impossible to achieve real competence without personal sacrifice.

1860, April 7.	<b>Unknown writer in business circular letter.</b> Taiping occupy Hangchow. Chinese general business slowly reviving. Foreign ultimatum re observance of Treaties of 1858.	1404
1860, April 7.	<b>Unknown Episcopal woman missionary in <i>Southern Episcopalian</i>.</b> Taiping rebels attack Shanghai. French legation advises evacuation of American women to warships. Taiping rebels at southern gate of old city. Taiping rebels claim not to molest foreigners. Shanghai international settlement strongly defended. American missionary women on ship—SS Swallow. Taiping in old city. Grant immunity for missionary houses. Chinese houses on fire in old city. <b>Miss Fay</b> warned that Taiping may use fire ships. Reports that English and French were setting fire to Chinese suburbs.	1404
1860, April 17.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> War with China now inevitable. Chinese resent British assault on Pei-ho forts. If China wins the war, foreigners will be forced to leave China. Now 74 Protestant missionaries in Shanghai, most lack language skills.	1408
1860, April 23.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong .</b> Visiting Nagasaki and Kanagawa. Staying with Rev. Channing Williams, Episcopal missionary [see page 1338]. Nagasaki, magnificent city and harbour. Japanese more impressive than Chinese. Women seem freer. Housing is clean and neat. Description of Japanese houses, towns and people. Visit to Governor of Nagasaki. Foreigners tolerated, not liked. No opportunities for evangelism. Police collect books and tracts and return them to missionaries. Recommends appointment of British chaplains. Bishop wrongly assumes he has conducted first Protestant service in Japan. 34 foreign residents—English, American, Dutch, attend. Impressed by religious sincerity of ordinary Japanese. Japanese Government divided but people friendly.	1408
1860, April 25.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith</b> Initial work overseeing alterations to house. Arrival of Bishop Boone. Missionary areas of responsibility. Day-school at Lau Zak. Refreshing knowledge of Chinese. Preparing vocabulary of Shanghai dialect. Working on Shanghai dialect New Testament. Protestant Missionary Conference. Chinese understanding of “sin ” “forgiveness” etc. Visit to City God Temple. Man seeks revenge from the gods. English sailors attend service in Christ Church.	1411
1860, April 27.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Foreign troops arriving daily. Britain demands apology for Pei-ho episode, compensation, etc.	1412
1860, May 14.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Individual responses to Christianity. Itineration resumed.	1412
1860, May 30.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Soochow [Suzhou] under Taiping attack. Shanghai to be defended by foreign troops.	1413

	Foreign troops moving north. Rebels executed in Shanghai daily. 40 in last few days.	
1860, June 30.	<b>Resignation of Miss Fay.</b> Subordinated to new, inexperienced male missionary. Requests transfer from Boys' School to other duties.	1413
1860, July.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Honkgu mission centre about two miles from old city. Responsible for Christ Church, assisted by Rev. Wong Kong Chai. Attendances at church and schools reduced as Chinese flee city. Attendance by refugees from other cities. 21 catechumens. 27 communicants. Continuing translation work on Prayer Book and hymns. Blind Institution has 60 members of whom 14 are communicants. Christian bookshop opened in old city. Boys' School—Curriculum—school in 15 <sup>th</sup> year. English-speaking ex-students in high demand. 38 scholars examined by Bishop Boone.	1414
1860, July-August.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Preached to crew of USS Hartford. Discussion about Taiping rebels with five educated Chinese Christians. Russian Minister disgusted with corruption of Chinese Imperial Household. Social gathering of Chinese Christian's at <b>Miss Jones'</b> house. Arrival of Dr. Schmid for Japan mission. Sudden failure of health of Rev. Thomas Yocom. Protestant Missionary Conference. Refugees at Chinese Parade ground outside South Gate. Mills of Presbyterian mission attempting relief. Syle and Mills employ Chinese traditional doctor for refugees. Three Chinese Christians suspended from Communion. Conditions improved at refugee camp. Foreigners raise \$10,000 to help. Boys' School examination. Girls' School. Syle teaching music. Chinese Prayer book parts being printed. Taiping rebels approach. American women and children to safety on ships. Chinese city very quiet. Taiping attack repulsed at South Gate.	1414
1860, July-August.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Impact of Taiping approach. Some refugees come in, other evacuate Shanghai. Foreign defences centred on South Gate. American women and children evacuated to ships. Taiping barbarities against rural Chinese population. Robbery & killing. Few Chinese attending local preaching place.	1417
1860, August.	<b>Mr. John Innocent.</b> Shanghai unsettled. Refugee influx fleeing Taiping. Many executions. Family flees old city to LMS location.	1419
1860, August.	<b>Southern Episcopalian.</b> Report of Taiping assault on Shanghai. Protestant Missionary Conference discusses attitude to Taiping. Are they Christian brethren? General answer is No. Bishop Boone insists that Bible must be their supreme standard of truth. Rev. Joseph Edkins has met Taiping leaders. Only 1,200 foreign troops left to guard Shanghai.	1419
1860, August 7.	<b>Bishop Boone. Miss Fay's resignation from Boys' School.</b> Boone affirms belief in "strong hand of a male superintendent." This view supported by other American clergy.	1421



- Mr. James T. Doyen appointed with his mother as matron.  
 No criticism of Miss Fay's teaching role.  
 Bishop aware Miss Fay would not work under Doyen.  
 Poor personal relations between Doyens and Miss Fay.  
 Mrs. Doyen dislikes Miss Fay.  
 Accepts resignation without any dissatisfaction with Miss Fay.
- 1860, August 31. **Rev. Dudley D. Smith.** 1421  
 Language study every morning is tedious.  
 Practices language in girls and boys day-schools.  
 Chinese education does not emphasise understanding.  
 Taiping repulsed despite assurances of friendship with foreigners.  
 Taiping merciless to Chinese, including those working for foreigners.  
 Initial foreign missionary goodwill to Taiping replaced with rejection.  
 Taiping capital—Nankind—desolate after eight years of Taiping occupation.  
 British and French defeat Chinese armies in North.
- 1860, September. **Dr. H. Ernst Schmid, Nagasaki.** 1423  
 Two months in Japan.  
 Rev. Channing Williams able to speak conversational Japanese.  
 Schmid learning language and starting medical practice.  
 Two categories of foreign comments about Japan.  
 Totally favourable—short-term visitors.  
 Japanese “lie, and steal, and cheat, as well as the Chinese.”
- 1860, September 2. **Rev. Edward W. Syle.** 1424  
 Preached on USS Hartford.  
 Eastern side of city burned by French to reduce cover for rebels.  
 Chinese Christian social gathering at Bridgmans.  
 Many former scholars working as interpreters.  
 Two French Protestant missionaries working in Shanghai.  
 Paris Evangelical Missionary Society (SMEP)—French Reformed Ch.<sup>42</sup>  
 Foreign troops generally well-behaved.  
 Visit Chinese arms merchant supplying Imperial troops.  
 Conveyer of foreign assistance to refugees.  
 See 1860, July-August. Rev. Edward W. Syle, above.  
 Provision of matting for huts for refugees.  
 Refugee assistance of \$100 from USS Hartford.  
 Chinese officials offer money to refugees on condition of leaving Shanghai.  
 Chinese Christians describe criticism offered by their neighbours.  
 Needs of children following death of Mrs. Syle force a return to the US.  
 Ordination as presbyters (Oct 28) of Smith, Thomson, Schereschewsky.  
 Meeting of mission clergy.  
**Appointment of Shanghai Diocesan Standing Committee**<sup>43</sup>  
 16<sup>th</sup> day of continuous rain in Shanghai and district.  
 French troops quartered in Shanghai Tea Gardens.  
 13 Chinese confirmed by Bishop Boone.  
 Visit to Institution for the Blind.  
 Confirmation of treaty rights of freedom of travel in China.  
 Farewell sermon at Christ Church.  
 Fifteenth anniversary of Syle's arrival in Shanghai.
- 1860, September. **Rev. Henry M. Parker.** 1428  
 Comments on Chinese language learning.  
 Universal relevance of Christianity.

Day

42 See online reference 1 July 2013 at —

[http://protestantism.enacademic.com/464/Paris\\_Evangelical\\_Mission\\_Society](http://protestantism.enacademic.com/464/Paris_Evangelical_Mission_Society)

43 In Australia and other Anglican churches, this arrangement is often termed, “Bishop in Council,” or “Diocesan Council.” Committees normally include lay people as well as clergy. A modern Episcopal statement on standing committees is at [http://www.edecr.org/page\\_content.php?i=83](http://www.edecr.org/page_content.php?i=83)

	Immortality of the soul. No concept equivalent to Judaeo Christian God. Few “natural” missionaries.		
1860, September 20 .	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Limits on missionary efforts. More missionaries needed. Language learning. Taiping attack on Shanghai—refugees.	1429	Fore
1860, September 26 .	<b>Rev. Issachar, Independent Baptist.</b> Meetings with Taiping leaders.	1430	
1860, October 1.	<b>Rev. Henry M. Parker.</b> Taiping attack on Shanghai Understanding ideology of Taiping. Taiping—rejection of idols and temples influential. Taiping attitude to Bible. Language learning proceeding slowly. Chinese traditional learning and memory.	1430	
1860, October 1.	<b>Mr. James T. Doyen.</b> Appointed lay superintendent of Boys’ School. Preparation of Christian juvenile books for young Chinese. Language learning. Doyen’s routine. 1. Theological Studies. 2. Supervision of Boys’ School. Two English language classes. 3. Language learning. 40,000 characters to be learned-most scholars manage 20,000 Chinese character described. Illustrated juvenile books to lift educational standards of young Chinese. Focus on religious and scientific content.	1431	
1860, October 4.	<b>Unknown Episcopalian writer.</b> Taiping created anarchy. Negotiations with Chinese Government not progressing. <b>Miss Conover</b> returns to Shanghai.	1433	
1860, October 10.	<b>PEC Board of Missions—Sub-Committee on China and Japan.</b> Progress in China Mission. No Protestant missionary work yet in Japan.	1434	
1860, October 10.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Report.</b> Staff list. Notes war in China with Britain and France. Taiping rebellion continues. Taiping. Boone not impressed by Christian claims. Chinese evacuating Shanghai despite foreign promises to defend city. Bishop Boone and new missionaries settling in. New missionaries learning language. Rev. and <b>Mrs.</b> Keith return to Shanghai. Mission made progress during Bishop Boone’s visit to US. <b>Miss Conover</b> returns to Shanghai. Rev. Robert Nelson doing deputation work in US. Mission Statistics	1435	Dea
1860, October 10.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Japan.</b> Staff List. Need for extreme caution in missionary work. Liggins prepares romanized form of phrase book for English language learners. About 2000 items. At printer. Liggins has set of all geographical, historical and scientific books published by missionaries in China.	1437	

- Sold several thousand copies to Japanese officials and educated men.  
Books contain Christian references but careful not to distribute Bibles etc.  
Sold about 20 copies of Chinese language New Testament, and 40 other religious books.
- 1860, October 10. **Liggins leaves Japan on health grounds.** 1438  
**Foreign Missions Committee— Bishop Boone’s Report.**  
Disappointment that 1858 Treaties not ratified by Chinese Government.  
Death of Mrs. Syle.  
Present state of China— Anarchy— Taiping— Shanghai depopulated.  
War with Britain and France.  
Duties of mission staff.  
Mission statistics.  
Japan. Remaining at Nagasaki.  
Japan— Statistics.  
Overall, more baptisms than any previous year.
- 1860, November 7. **Bishop Boone.** 1440  
War ends with Treaty of Tientsin [Tianjin].  
Schereschewsky, Thomson and Smith ordained presbyters [priests].
- 1860, November 7. **Rev. Thomas Yocom.** Mr. and Mrs Yocom return to US. 1440
- 1860, November 21. **Bishop Boone.** 1440  
Confidence lacking in peace.  
Taiping active but not in Shanghai.
- 1860, November 21. **Rev. Dudley D. Smith.** 1441  
Language learning.  
Day-school has average 13-15 pupils.  
Curriculum.  
Romanization.  
Institution for the Blind.  
Industrial school a new concept for China.  
His language teacher and family ask for baptism.  
Yet to see text of Treaty of Tientsin.  
Taiping and Christianity.
- 1860, November 21. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1442  
**Funeral Sermon on the Death of the Rev. John T. Points.**  
**Richmond, Virginia.**

## Part 17 Shanghai, 1861.

1443-1510

1861. **Bishop Boone: The Impact of the Civil War upon the Episcopal Mission.** 1444  
Nearly all the Episcopal Missionaries were Southerners.  
Bishop and Mrs. Boone uncertain about their children at school in the North.  
Board of Missions demands reduction in expenses.  
Three of four years of war, nothing received from New York.<sup>44</sup>  
No contributions from the South. Reduced contributions from the North.
- 1861, January 1. **Foreign Missions Committee— Epiphany Appeal.** 1444  
**“Evils unlooked for and most appalling have fallen upon our nation, threatening the direst consequences.”**
- 1861, January 1. **Foreign Missions Committee..** 1445  
Taiping attack repulsed by foreign forces.  
Letter in *Southern Episcopalian*.  
Taiping— attitude of mission.

44 Bishop Boone was effectively bankrupted by the loss of all his property in Charleston during the Civil War. His situation was so acute that he sold all his furniture and sublet half his residence in Shanghai. He was able to survive by the financial generosity of business friends in Shanghai. Letter to Miss Fay, 30 November 1863, Singapore. Virginia Historical Association, MISSIN3386a1496-1516

1861, January 1.	<b>Rev. Henry M. Parker.</b> Itineration in interior. Taiping effect on countryside. Many temples and idols destroyed. Chinese meal, “suffered great mortification of the flesh.” Unsuccessful attempt to visit Taiping camp. Refugees everywhere.	1446
1861, January 4.	<b>Rev. Elliott H. Thomson.</b> Life in Shanghai free of rebels. Pastoral responsibilities—Syle’s former tasks.	1447
1861, January 5.	<b>Rev. S. J. Schereschewsky.</b> “Daily proceedings.” Language learning. One day much like another. “Most disagreeable part of a missionary’s work.” Requires “some two or three years.” Supervises a day-school. Translating Psalms into Shanghai dialect.	1448
1861, January 22.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> In charge of the printing press. Translating Old Testament lectionary passages into Shanghai dialect. Shanghai dialect translations: Gospels, Acts, Genesis, Epistle to Romans, Epistle of James. Christmas Day Communion—65 Chinese communicants. “Our flock is in large part made up of those whose bodies need relief.”	1449
1861, January 24.	<b>Dr. H. Ernst Schmid, Nagasaki.</b> Language learning. Japan opened because there was no viable alternative. Critique of Japanese social order. Merchants a potential revolutionary class. Discusses his medical practice in Nagasaki. “A missionary physician is not of much avail,” —a want of usefulness. An English-language medical class. Conflict between followers of the Shogun and the Emperor. Provides a recommendation for Captain Morton of the SS Swallow.	1449
1861, January 24.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> British attempt to ascend the Yangtse River to furthest point. Schereschewsky to join English expedition to Western China, Tibet, India. <b>Miss Emma Jones to retire.</b> Syle and family arrive in US.	1451
1861, February.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> Effect of present troubles upon the missionary treasury.	1452
1861, February 14.	<b>Mrs. Cleveland Keith (Caroline Tenney).</b> Rebellion affecting educational efforts—day-schools closed. Translating children’s books, two works by Gallaudet. New girls’ day-school opened. Aims to translate one book each year. Hopes to assist adult women frustrated by bad weather, movement stopped. Disinterest of many women in Christianity—adherence to Chinese culture. Patience often stretched. Encouragement and support of Mr. Keith.	1452
1861, February 19.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smtih</b> Language learning still chief challenge at end of first year in Shanghai. Improvement in understanding of Chinese life and culture. New products from Blind Institution resisted by workers. Girls’ School—“Chinese girls could be taught to do anything.” The British Yangtse expedition.	1454
1861, March 9.	<b>Rev. S. J. Schereschewsky.</b> Difficulty of navigation on the Yangtse River. Ships aground.	1455

Refi

	Formed a decidedly bad opinion of the Taiping. “Spurious Christianity.” Scenery magnificent. Prevailing dialects are forms of Mandarin.	
1861, March 16.	<b>Rev. S. J. Schereschewsky.</b> Keeping daily journal. At least 3 days to transcribe. Landscape flat for 150 miles above Shanghai. Near Chinkiang, country has a hilly aspect. Description of Chinkiang and Nanking. Finest scenery is Po-yang Lake. Hankow, 1000 miles from Hankow. Taiping rebellion has created a desert—neglected fields, deserted villages. “Desolation and ruin are the results of their occupation of any place.”	1456
1861.	<b>Rev. John Liggins, England.</b> Missionary opportunities in Japan. 1. Language learning with Japanese teachers and books. 2. Prepare philological works for subsequent missionaries. 3. Provide Japanese learning English with suitable books. 5. Sell religious books (including the Bible) in Chinese. 6. Talk freely with local people. 7. Demonstrate Christianity in life and service to Japanese. Prohibition on Christianity still nominally in force—internal political issue.	1458
1861, April 6.	<b>Mrs. Jane Edkins, LMS.</b>	1459
1861, April 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Boys’ School closed due to lack of funds from US. <b>Miss Fay</b> and 18 boys move to Church Missionary Society School. <b>Miss Fay</b> resigned from Episcopal school following arrival of Mr. & Mrs. Doyen. Remains an Episcopal missionary. British expedition returns from Hankow.	1459
1861, April.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Return of the Syle family to the US.	1460
1861, April.	<b>Rev. John Liggins, New York.</b> The Emperor and the Shogun.	1460
1861, April 22.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Responsibilities following departure of Rev. Edward W. Syle. Christ Church. Blind Institution. Financial management of mission. Rev. Dudley Smith relocated to Chefoo [Yantai]. Chinese funeral customs, conflict with Christianity. Baptism refused to old man who sells traditional grave goods. Day-schools. Christian education for male day-school teachers. Increase in congregation at Christ Church as rebel threat recedes. Awareness of the civil war and impact on the Episcopal Church.	1461
1861, April 23.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Departure of Parker and Smith to Shantung Province. Visit of Revs. Joseph Edkins and Griffith John (LMS) to Shantung Province. Description of Shan-tung Province. Hopeful characteristics of the people. Prevalence of one or two family villages. Few Christians—including Catholics. Tribute junks have spread Christian literature from Shanghai. Chefoo [Yantai] visited. (A new treaty port). Travelling by horses, mules, asses, mule sedan chairs, and carts. Use of heated kang or beds. Met people who had been to Shanghai. Official awareness of the presence of visitors.	1463

	No obstacles to foreign missionaries. Three groups missionaries must deal with: people, officials, Taiping. Description of Taiping palace behaviour at Nanking.	
1861, April.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Extracts from a speech given in Dublin, April 1861 St Paul's College. Government funded day-schools. 800-1000 boys enrolled. Bishop chairs Board of Education—3 clergy; 3 lay members. Curriculum: Chinese language instruction. Chinese classics taught. New Testament a textbook in all schools. Japan. Structure and distribution of power within government. Missionary access—importance of British chaplaincies. Ample time for language learning.	1468
1861, April 30.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Extracts from a speech given in London, April 30, 1861 Taiping Rebellion has positive and negative aspects. Weakening of old religious order—destruction of temples and idols. Difficulty of evangelism in the interior due to unrest. Smith's early years in Ningpo.	1469
1861, May.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Appeal for contributions. Civil War impact—fall in revenue.	1470
1861, May.	<b>Miscellaneous Items.</b> Affairs in China. “England's diplomacy is stained with opium.” Armstrong guns. British “armies are irresistible so long as they remain on the coast.” No certainty that the Chinese accept obligations forced upon them. British trade mainly in opium that benefits India, not Britain.	1470
1861, May 3.	<b>Rev. Henry M. Parker.</b> Parker and Smith in Shandong Province. Original plan was to establish a mission in upper reaches of Yangtse River. Situation in China, and Civil War in America, almost decided to leave.	1473
1861, May 14.	<b>Ms Isabel Habersham, Savannah GA.</b> <sup>45</sup> Civil War. Still able to send missionary items to China through New York. Attack on Fort Sumter forced upon the South. US Navy with the Union. Blockade of the South.	1474
1861, May 17.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Rapid thinning out of missionary numbers. January 1860, 21 adults; May 1861, 7 adults in Shanghai Epis. Mission. Slow but steady progress in translation into Shanghai dialect. Summary of publications. Shanghai Chinese population increasing due to perception of safety. General condition of China “more and more hopeless.”	1475
1861, May 18.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> <b>Deposition of Rev. Tong Chu Kiung</b> from Christian ministry. Chu Kiang has been bent on resigning. Two reasons: 1. Lack of success in his ministerial work. 2. Insufficient financial support for his family and future needs. Bishop Boone satisfied that Tong Chu Kiung was appropriately paid. Paid similar amount to Chinese literary class. He has been permitted to earn additional income.	1476

---

45 Ms Habersham was a relative of either Bishop Boone or Mrs. Boone and a long-time supporter of the China Mission..

	Resents earning less than former scholars in secular employment. Schereschewsky in far west China. Parker and Smith families now sharing house in village near Chefoo [Yantai].		
1861, May 29.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b> Two ways of collecting and using money. 2. Transparency and responsibility of clergy and laity for use of money. Argues that all missionaries limit full disclosure—"lack of candor." Cites missionary evasion about the Taiping movement. Taiping statement "Toleration of Christianity" with English translation.	1478	
1861, May 29.	<b>Rev. S. J. I. Schereschewsky.</b> Report on journey to Western China, Tibet, etc. Aims: Missionary options. Improvement in Chinese language skills. Unable to reach Tibet due to anarchy prevailing in China. Catholic missionaries everywhere. Impact of Civil War on missionary funding.	1481	
1861, June 3.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith.</b> Abandoned plans for an upper Yangtse station. Now in Shantung Province. French troops have small presence in Chefoo. Description of district. Chinese housing—single door into a courtyard with rooms surrounding. Interior well-plastered and some use of wall-paper. Transportation by animals and carts. People bigger than around Shanghai. All coffins properly buried. Graveyards well cared for. High standard of agriculture, including machine sowing of seeds. Local dialect is "Mandarin Colloquial."	1482	Peop
1861, June 13.	<b>Dr. Ernst Schmid, Nagasaki.</b> Medical practice successful. Ill-health forced retirement. Impressed by Japanese family life seen on home visits. Assessment of Japanese moral character. Some case reports. Nearly 1000 patients treated many more than once. Common sicknesses. Hospital supported by foreign English merchants. Missionary efforts in Japan. "There is much to encourage."	1484	
1861, June 18.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams, Nagasaki.</b> Nothing of substance to report. Law against Christianity still in force. Official methods to prevent conversion. Local registration. Money paid to informants identifying Christians. Preparatory work for missionaries. Language learning. Translation of books etc. Importance of Medical services. Impact of Civil War.	1489	Pect
1861, July 9.	<b>Boston Daily Journal.</b> Closure of Boys' School in Shanghai reflected in other Protestant missions. Appeal for release of savings to missions.	1491	
1861, July 13.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo.</b> Two years since leaving US. Language learning. Civil War.	1492	

1861, July 17.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Schereschewsky in Shanghai. Rebels prevented continuing journey. <b>Miss Jeannette Conover</b> returns to US. Ill-health.	1492
1861, July 23.	<b>Rev. John Liggins, England.</b> Refers to Dublin address of Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong (above). Christian books in Japan—Bishop Smith incorrect about restrictions. Protestant missionaries report sale of hundreds of copies of Bible. Only prohibitions on American products “opium and firearms.”	1493
1862, February 12.	<b>Death of Rev. Henry M. Parker, Chefoo.</b> Parker and Holmes (American Baptist) murdered by rebels. (Passing reference to the Confederate States).	1493
undated	<b>Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky on the importance of Mandarin.</b> Chinese can be acquired by persons of ordinary capacity, but extraordinary diligence.	1494
1861, October 12.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo</b> Deaths of Parker and Holmes. Circumstances of murders.	1494
1861, October 15.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Pastoral and publishing work. Shanghai threatened by rebels but protected by foreign arms. No interest in Christianity. Passing references to death of Parker and to Civil War.	1499
1861, October 23.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Covering note from Spirit of Missions. Death of Rev. Henry Parker. Family enroute from Chefoo to Shanghai. Arrival of Mrs. Parker and family in Shanghai. “Few American ships going to the United States now.” Enclosed copy of Smith letter(see pp 1444-1449). Parker feared for his family but not himself. Smith to remain in Chefoo. China in general state of anarchy, stimulated by British aggression. Boone refers to OUR Minister (i.e. American) for compensation.	1500
1861, October 24.	<b>American Press Reports on Chefoo Murders.</b> <i>New York Commercial Advertiser.</i> <i>Christian Intelligencer.</i>	1502
1861, November 2.	<b>Death of Rev. Dr. E. C. Bridgman. Evangelist journal.</b> Died 27 October 1862 in Shanghai, of dysentery.	1503
1861, November 23.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Shanghai surrounded by rebels. Civil War is a “bitter scourge”—“a grief too big for utterance.” Schereschewsky to join Smith in Shandong Province. Mrs. Parker and son have arrived in England.	1503
1861, November 28.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo</b> Deaths of Parker and Holmes. Expecting Schereschewsky. Villagers “aloof”—probably plundered Smith house during rebel advance.	1503
1861, November- December.	<b>PEC Board of Missions, Annual Meeting.</b> Report of Foreign Committee. Impact of Civil War. Lack of funds for missions. China “presents little for congratulation.” Defection of Rev. Tong Chu Kiung. Japan report, Rev. John Liggins.	1504
1861, November- December.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee, Annual Report.</b> Civil War and financial problems—shortfall greater than expected. Southern dioceses to send funds direct to missions.	1505



	Boys' School disbanded and premises sold to meet current mission expenses. Doyen and his mother have retired from the mission. Resignation of Mr. Edward Hubbell and catechist He Ding. Rev. Robert Nelson unable to return to China. <sup>46</sup>	
1861, November-December.	<b>Bishop Boone, Annual Report to Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Mission staffing. Great changes in past year. Continuing activities. Mission statistics. Japan—situation unchanged.	1506
1861, November-December.	<b>Bishop Boone, Annual Report to PEC Board of Missions.</b> Mission staffing. Details of staff changes including retirements, resignations, etc. Current roles of mission staff. Mission statistics. Japan.	1508
1861, December. 24	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> First-hand report of murder of Parker and Holmes.	1510
<b>Part 18 Shanghai, 1862.</b>		<b>1511-1554</b>
1862, January 7.	<b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay.</b> [With Church Missionary Society]. Suffering of Chinese through rebellion. Missionary attempts to relieve suffering. Rebel threat to Shanghai. Foreign military defence of Shanghai. “a great city of refuge.” Distractions from missionary work. Seventy children in <b>Miss Fay's</b> charge: 55 boys; 15 girls in day-school. Girls not taught English. Boys' School now with Church Missionary Society. Letter from Kie Who to an American supporter.	1512
1862, January 8.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Miss Fay with English Church Missionary Society Boys' School.	1513
1862, January 10.	<b>Rev. Channing M. Williams, Nagasaki.</b> Language learning. Distribution of Testaments and tracts. Books often borrowed, read and returned for fear of officials. Dr. Schmid retired through ill-health. Treaty provides for Japan-based foreign merchants to trade from Japan. Japanese Embassy to Europe. <sup>47</sup> Tsushima Island dispute with Russia. Britain supports Japan. <sup>48</sup>	1513
1862, January 16.	<b>Miss Isabel Habersham.</b> Letter from Savannah to New York through Federal Censors Office.	1515
1862, January 22.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Shanghai threatened by Taiping rebels. Any assault considered an attack on foreigners. Episcopal mission considered safe—separate from main foreign settlement. Some Chinese Christians have deserted the mission. Publishing work.	1515

---

46 Nelson was present at the Episcopal Convention of the Confederate States in Columbia SC October 1861. Nelson remained in the North during the Civil War. He was an official clerical participant at the funeral of President Ulysses S. Grant in New York, 8 August 1885. Nelson diaries; Series 4.1; Diary 1878,1885-1886;

47 See online 1 July 2013 at — [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/First\\_Japanese\\_Embassy\\_to\\_Europe\\_\(1862\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/First_Japanese_Embassy_to_Europe_(1862))

48 Tsushima Incident, online 1 July 2013 at — [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tsushima\\_Incident](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tsushima_Incident)

1862, January 22.	Mrs. Keith in ill-health, recuperative leave in Japan. <b>Rev. Issachar Roberts, Independent Baptist.</b> Appraisal of Taiping after 15 months residence in Nanking. Originally a supporter, now opposed to them. Taiping Christianity a farce.	1516
1862, January 23.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Taiping marching on Shanghai. Americans form a defence committee. Yoong Kiung a candidate for ordination.	1517
1862, February 14.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Visit of Japanese Embassy to Europe. Rebels capture Ningpo. All CMS missionary work suspended. Rev. Issachar Roberts [see above]. Critique of Taiping.	1517
1862, February 26.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo.</b> Language learning. Events following murders of Parker and Holmes. Widespread poverty following rebel activity. Initial obstruction by officials ended with rebel attacks. Chinese servants express interest in Christianity. Translation work. Disinterest of Chinese in Christianity.	1519
1862, March.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Improved contributions.	1521
1862, March 6.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Chinese refugees in Shanghai. British determined to repel rebels from Shanghai district.	1521
1862, May 1.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo.</b> Itineration in eastern Shandong Province [250 miles on horseback]. Description of towns and villages. First foreigners, objects of curiosity. Contacts with Southern China by sea. Book and tract distribution. Local literati show contempt for foreigners and Christianity. Warm reception from two old Chinese teachers. “Loess” dust clouds. Warm reception from two mandarins-one young, one old [Ningpo and Canton]. Chinese keep idols out of custom, not active belief. Three local suicides.	1521
1862, May 3.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Nothing new. War still imminent. Contagious diseases in Shanghai. Keith’s visit Japan and decide to return to US. Missionary movements.	1525
1862, May 10.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith, Kanagawa, Japan.</b> Mrs. Caroline Keith’s illness described. Returning to US.	1625
1862, June 3.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Letters received from US. Contagious diseases in Shanghai. Taiping siege.	1527
1862, June 18.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Contagious diseases in Shanghai. Asiatic cholera.	1527
1862, June 30.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith, San Francisco.</b> Caroline Tenney Keith extremely ill. Staying in Bishop Kip’s house.	1527
1862, July.	<b>Church Missionary Society.</b> Rt. Rev. George Smith, Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong in Beijing. Description of Beijing [Peking]	1528

	<p>Future role of foreign powers given failures of Chinese Government.          French Government and Catholic missions.          Chinese Government and Catholic missions.          English missions in China.          Dr. Lockhart of the LMS only Protestant missionary in Beijing.          Successful medical mission.          Not all Protestant missionaries possess “prudence and discretion.”          Rev. J.S. Burdon.          Several Shanghai missionaries now in Tianjin [Tientsin].          Free to preach. Hopeful of access to Beijing.          All Protestant missionaries should speak Mandarin.          Day-schools and hospital opened.          Beijing-Tientsin—distance of 80 miles in springless cart.          Dr. Lockhart, formerly of Shanghai.          Hospital attached to British Legation, no missionaries allowed.          No missionary work at hospital.          Teaching English to Tsungli Yamen (Zongli Yamen embryo Foreign Office].          Chaplain to British Legation.          Training legation interpreters.          Burdon learning Peking Mandarin,</p>	
1862, July 3.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Schereschewsky to Peking with US Minister Burlingame and Rev. Dr. S. Wells Williams. To stay at least three or four years.	1531
1862, July 7.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Caroline Tenney Keith extremely ill. Staying in Bishop Kip’s house.	1532
1862, July 11.	<b>Rev. Cleveland Keith.</b> Death of Caroline Tenney Keith in San Francisco.	1532
1862, July 19.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Mission free of sickness.	1532
1862, July 27.	<b>Rev. and Mrs. Cleveland Keith.</b> Death of Rev. Cleveland Keith.	1533
1862, July 30.	<b>Bishop Boone to Rev. Dr. William Sparrow.</b> Death of Mrs. Susan Smith— wife of Rev. Dudley Smith. Daughter of Sparrow.	1535
1862, August.	<b>New York Journal of Commerce.</b> The Civil War in China. Taiping on the Yangtse River. Foreign action against Taiping. Looting by foreign troops.	1536
1862, August 2.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Death of Mrs. Dudley D. Smith from cholera, at Chefoo. Other missionary deaths in Chefoo. <b>Miss Emma Jones</b> write about Rev. Cleveland Keith.	1538
1862, August 7.	<b>Bishop William Ingraham Kip.</b> Death of Mr. and Mrs. Keith. Newspaper notice. Keith wills his estate to PEC Foreign Missions.	1539
1862, August 7.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b> Review of Foreign Missions Committee Annual Report. Impact of Civil War upon mission income.	1541
1862, October 2.	<b>Bishop Boone. Report.</b> Mission staff. Death of Rev. Henry Parker. Deaths of Rev. and Mrs. Cleveland Keith. Resignation of Rev. Edward W. Syle. Impact of Taiping. Report of Rev. Dudley D. Smith from Chefoo. Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky in Peking. Mission statistics. Japan. Rev. Channing Williams and Dr. Schmid	1542

1862, July 15.	<b>Bishop Boone t PEC Board of Missions.</b> Death of Rev. Henry Parker. Deaths of Rev. and Mrs. Cleveland Keith. Shanghai surrounded by Taiping rebels. Staff responsibilities. Mission statistics. Japan.	1546
1862, October 21.	<b>Rev. Elliott H. Thomson.</b> Shanghai, ill-health—loss of foreign lives greater than previous 12 years. Catholics lost eight foreign priests—half their workforce. Impact of deaths on Chinese. Thomson leaves old city for Hongkou. Chinese New Year. Boys' School examination and vacation. Impact of sickness and rebellion on Chinese. Foreign military action against rebels.	1547
1862, October 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Rev. Cleveland and Mrs. Caroline Tenney-Keith.	1549
1862, November 11.	<b>Miss Jeannette Conover.</b> Possible return to missionary work in Japan.	1549
1862, November 22.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Rev. Dudley D. Smith returns to Chefoo. Bishop Boone concerned about isolation of Smith.	1550
1862, November.	<b>Miss Jeannette Conover.</b> Arrival in San Francisco enroute to Japan. With Rev. J Hepburn [US Pres]. Reports seeing wreck of the Golden Gate-death of Rev. Cleveland Keith. Resided with Rev. W. Loomis, Presbyterian missionary to Chinese in SF.	1550
1862, November.	<b>Annual Report of American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Miss.</b> ACFM missionaries in North China.	1551
1862, November 29.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo.</b> Need for an additional missionary. Protestant Missionary death-toll. Decision to return to Chefoo. 21 Protestant missionary colleagues have died. Intends to board daughter with Presbyterian missionaries, 50 miles away.	1552

## **Part 19 Shanghai, 1863.**

**1555-1568**

1863, March 7.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Mrs. Boone, ill-health. Recuperative leave in Japan.	1556
1863, April 7.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith, Chefoo.</b> Returning to US with daughter. Bishop and Mrs. Boone in Hong Kong. Resided with Rev. Dr. S. Wells Williams—soon to leave for Peking. Not going to Japan due to unrest and possible war with Britain.	1556
1863, April 13.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b>	1556
1863, May 5.	<b>Rev. Elliott M. Thomson.</b> Absence of Bishop and Mrs. Boone. Episcopal Mission has only two missionaries. Five day-schools open. Staff responsibilities. Anglican assistance.	1557
1863, May 7.	<b>Miss Jeannette E. Conover.</b> Withdrawn from Japan—gender fears dominant. Rev. Channing Williams safe at Nagasaki. British demand compensation over death of Richardson [Namamugi Incident]. Samurai bravado. Villages evacuated. American anxiety over personal security.	1557

Feat

	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Action of American minister. Plan to use American ships as refuges.</li> <li>Some American women carrying pistols.</li> <li>Japanese leaders preparing for war.</li> <li>Foreign settlement at Yokohama indefensible.</li> <li>Miss Conover unable to do any missionary work.</li> </ul>	
1863, June 3.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Bishop and Mrs. Boone in Shanghai.</li> <li>Japan. Williams and Conover expected in Shanghai.</li> </ul>	1559
1863, September.	<p><b>Rev. James C. Hepburn, Japan.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Erection of missionary building.</li> <li>Governor of Yokohama asks for English-language school for young men. Curriculum.</li> <li>Modification of anti-Christian laws.</li> </ul>	1559
1863, June.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Final burial of <b>Mrs. Cleveland Tenney-Keith.</b></li> </ul>	1561
1863, October.	<p><b>PEC Board of Missions, Annual Meeting.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Impact of Civil War. Loyalty to the Union.</li> <li>Wartime economic boom not reflected in giving to missions.</li> <li>Provision for China and Japan missions.</li> <li>China. <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Mission staff. Greatly reduced strength.</li> <li>Church services maintained.</li> <li>Chefoo abandoned.</li> <li>Mission statistics.</li> </ul> </li> <li>Japan. <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Mission staff.</li> <li><b>Miss Conover</b> returns to US.</li> </ul> </li> </ul>	1561
1863, October.	<p><b>Bishop Boone. Annual Report.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>China. <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Mission staff.</li> <li>Taiping rebels held at bay by foreign military forces.</li> <li>Foreign population of Shanghai increasing.</li> <li>British chaplaincy vacant. Americans assist with services.</li> <li>Mission statistics.</li> </ul> </li> <li>Japan. <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Mission staff.</li> <li>Hope to avoid war.</li> </ul> </li> </ul>	1563
1863, October 24.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Bishop and Mrs. Boone visit Yokohama.</li> <li>No improvement in Mrs. Boone's health.</li> <li>Cared for by Dr. and Mrs. James Hepburn [see above].</li> <li>Mrs. Boone must leave China for at least two years.</li> </ul>	1565
1863, November 8.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Rev. Wong Kong Chai [Huang Guangci] ordained priest.</li> <li>Chinese merchants provide financial support for mission.</li> </ul>	1565
1863, November 8.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Arrive in Singapore on recuperative leave.</li> </ul>	1566
1863, November 30.	<p><b>Bishop Boone to Miss Fay</b> [on leave in Europe].</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Thanks parting gifts.</li> <li>Mrs. Boone's health very precarious.</li> <li>Bishop intending to return to Shanghai. Mrs. Boone to go to Malta with Bishop and Mrs. George Smith.</li> <li>Boone's financial situation following loss of property in Charleston.</li> <li>Unable to save from salary because of travels associated with Mrs. Boone's health.</li> </ul>	1566
1863, December 7.	<p><b>Bishop Boone.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Smallpox in Shanghai.</li> </ul>	1567

- Moving to Egypt.  
 1863, December 15. **Mrs. Phoebe Boone to her sons.** 1567  
 Disorientated by travels. Enjoyed Japan.  
 Refers to “this trouble in America.”  
 William (Jr) at Princeton University. Thomas in the South.  
 Singapore “lovely place.” No pain but very weak.

## **Part 20 Shanghai, 1864.**

**1569-1610**

- 1864, January. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1570  
 Episcopal Church.  
 No theological graduates offering for foreign missions.  
 91 clergy at home for every one abroad.  
 Episcopal Mission, China.  
 Bishop Boone, two presbyters, one Chinese deacon.  
 Episcopal Mission, Japan.  
 Rev. Channing Williams working alone.  
 Church Missionary College, Islington. Missionary Candidates.  
 30 year average 22. Last 4 years average 42. Highest 63 students.  
 Episcopal Church average missionary contributions c1 cent per member.  
 Introduction of voluntary collectors on English CMS model.  
 Summary of voluntary collection plan.
- 1864, January. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1572  
 China.  
 Missionaries cannot reside in Beijing [Peking].  
 Schereschewsky officially an interpreter in American Legation.  
 Missionaries reside at Tianjin [Tientsin].  
 Report from visitor to Beijing [Peking].
- 1864, January. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1579  
 Japan.  
 Situation in Japan. Article from *Christian Times*.  
 Opposition of leading nobles to treaties.  
 Japan like Europe in feudal times.  
 Size of private armies.  
 Aggressive behaviour of many “lawless and dissolute” foreigners.
- 1864, January. **Rev. Channing M. Williams, Nagasaki.** 1577  
 Language learning.  
 Chinese books distributed.  
 Religious talks and distribution of books and tracts done quietly.  
 Night visits from Japanese military officer to avoid official notice.
- 1864, January 8. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1579  
 Death of Miss Caroline Jones.
- 1864, January 8. **Bishop Boone, re Mrs. Boone, near Aden.** 1579  
 Mrs. Boone confined to bed. Hope for recovery in Egypt.  
 Death of Miss Caroline Jones from smallpox.  
 Episcopal mission “struggling for life.”
- 1864, January 15. **Bishop Boone, Suez.** 1580  
 Mrs. Boone weaker every day-”a mere skeleton.”  
 Death imminent.
- 1864, January 16. **Bishop Boone, Suez.** 1580  
 Boone’s safely ashore in Suez Hotel.
- 1864, January 22. **Bishop Boone, To his sons in America. From Suez.** 1581  
**DEATH & BURIAL OF MRS. PHOEBE BOONE.**  
 Mrs. Boone died at 4.45 p.m., 20 January 1864.  
 Buried in British Protestant cemetery on an “Island in the harbor.”  
 Assistance of British Consul and his Chinese boat crew.  
 Bishop Boone to leave January 23 for England.

1864, January 22.	Robbie Boone to be placed with Miss Emma Jones, at Wiesbaden. <b>Bishop Boone, To Foreign Missions Committee. From Suez.</b> Mrs. Boone died at 4.45 p.m., 20 January 1864. Illness painless, marked by emaciation, weakness, weariness and fatigue. Assistance of British Consul and his Chinese boat crew. Robbie Boone to be placed with Miss Emma Jones, at Wiesbaden until end of Civil War.	1581
1864, February 8.	<b>Bishop Boone, To Miss Lydia Mary Fay. From Bay of Biscay.</b> From Shanghai to Suez. Mrs. Boone died at 4.45 p.m., 20 January 1864. Details of her decline, death and burial. Robbie Boone to be placed with Miss Emma Jones, at Wiesbaden until end of Civil War.	1584
1864, February 22.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Staff Responsibilities. Maintains church services. Supervises 6 schools; Rev. Wong Kong Chai, 2 schools; Yoong Kiung 1 school; Mrs, Muirhead LMS, 1 school. 2 of the 6 schools belong to CMS. Heavy administrative workload. Schereschewsky working with Burdon.	1585
1864, February.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee— Japan.</b> Protestant missionaries distributed many books in Chinese. Dr Hepburn (American Presbyterian) preparing books in Japanese. Japanese officials have not intervened with book distribution. McCartee’s (Am Baptist) tract “True Doctrine made Plain or Easy” being prepared for publication in Japanese. Outline of content.	1586
1864, March 5.	<b>Bishop Boone. From Wiesbaden.</b> Letter to uncle. Death of Mrs. Boone. Memorial Grave Stone inscription. Boone boys in US. Willie at Princeton, Thomas in New York with Oliphant & Co. Henry in Shanghai. Cotton from Mrs. Haversham of Savannah sold in Liverpool by Boone. Hope for speedy end to Civil War.	1586
1864, March 8.	<b>U.S. Minister Anson Burlingame to Chinese Foreign Minister.</b> Re. Confederate warship “Alabama.” Invoking treaties to exclude ship from Chinese waters and ports.	1588
1864, March 19.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop Boone returning to Shanghai.	1588
1864, March 23.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Death of Mrs. Boone. Impending return of Bishop Boone. Anglican clergyman from Peking assisting mission. Prevalence of smallpox. Ten burials in eight days. Schools fully enrolled. Schereschewsky working with Burdon.	1589
1864, March 23.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Letter published in Sydney <i>Church of England Chronicle</i> . Extensive visitation of China. Planning retirement to England in 1865 after 20 years in China. Anglican staffing in China.	1590
1864, April.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Two Protestant missionaries in Japan. Rev. Channing Williams and	1590

	Rev. G.H. Verbeck, Dutch Reformed Church. —Letter from <i>Missionary Recorder</i> . Great uncertainty over foreign relations. Japanese “ronin” suppressed by Japanese authorities. Japanese defeated in skirmishes with foreign navies. Living in Nagasaki [initially with Williams]				
1864, May 5.	<b>Bishop Boone</b> from Aden. Cyclone enroute to Ceylon [Sri Lanka]. Return to Aden for repairs. Ship nearly sank. Boone lost all his possessions.	1591			
1864, May 6.	<b>Bishop Boone—to his sons in America.</b> Cyclone episode. Seven feet of water in engine room. Only one care, for Robbie in Wiesbaden.	1591			
1864, May 16.	<b>Bishop Boone off Ceylon.</b> Letter of appreciation to Bishop Boone from ship’s officers and passengers of S.S. Candia.	1592			
1864, May 17.	<b>Bishop Boone, off Ceylon.</b> Boone’s response.	1592			
1864, May 31.	<b>Bishop Boone.</b> Bishop Boone at Singapore.	1593			
1864, June 21.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Bishop Boone arrived in Shanghai, 13 June. Seriously ill.	1593			
<table border="1" style="margin: 10px auto; width: 30%; border-collapse: collapse;"> <tr> <td style="text-align: center; padding: 5px;"><b>DEATH OF BISHOP BOONE.</b></td> </tr> <tr> <td style="text-align: center; padding: 5px;"><b>17 JULY 1864</b></td> </tr> </table>				<b>DEATH OF BISHOP BOONE.</b>	<b>17 JULY 1864</b>
<b>DEATH OF BISHOP BOONE.</b>					
<b>17 JULY 1864</b>					
1864, July 16.	<b>Dr. Henry Boone to William Boone [Willie].</b> Bishop Boone’s last hours.	1593			
1864, July 16.	<b>George W. Seward, Consul-General.</b> Report to Department of State of death of Rt. Rev. William Jones Boone.	1594			
1864, July 21.	<b>A. H. H. Shanghai.</b> Obituary of Bishop Boone.	1595			
1864, July 21.	<b>Dr. Henry Boone to William Boone Jr., [Willie].</b> Bishop Boone’s death and burial.	1595			
1864, July 21.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Death of Bishop Boone. Condition of the Mission for past 8 months. Staff responsibilities.	1596			
1864, September.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Peking.</b> Six Protestant missionaries living in Peking—4 British, 2 American.	1597	Rep		
1864, September.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Men needed for China. Catholic missionaries in China-Peking cemetery. Almost all Protestant missionaries in the southern provinces. Missionaries needed in the northern provinces. Shanghai—“a discouraging field.” Occupy Peking. Place southern missions under Chinese leadership.	1597			
1864, September 3.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Shanghai “going on very well.” Rev. Wong Kong Chai associated with Bishop Boone for 22 years. Rev. J. S. Burdon of the CMS in Peking returned to England. Rev. W. A. P. Martin working in Peking.	1599	Chri		
1864, September 10.	<b>Rev. Dr. S. Wells Williams.</b> Obituary of Bishop Boone.	1600			



1864, October 4.	<b>PEC Board of Missions.</b>	1601
	Appreciation of Memoirs of Mrs. Caroline Tenney-Keith.	
1864, October 4.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	1602
	Resolutions following the death of Bishop Boone.	
1864, October 4.	<b>Review of Foreign Missions Committee Report.</b>	1602
	d Acknowledges the difficulties of the mission in China.	
1864, October 4.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee Report.</b>	1602
	Mission staff.	
	Death of <b>Mrs. Boone.</b>	
	Bishop urged to visit US but returned to Shanghai and death.	
	Death of <b>Miss Catharine Jones.</b>	
	Mission activities.	
1864, October.	<b>Rev. Dudley S. Smith.</b>	1604
	Province of Shantung as mission field.	
	Opportunities in China.	
	Breaking down of Chinese exclusiveness.	
	Places occupied by PEC missionaries.	
	Removing headquarters of the PEC mission from Shanghai raised.	
	No competing Episcopal jurisdiction in the North.	
	Comparison of Chinese, North and South.	
	Mission work in South hindered by misconduct of foreigners.	
1864, October 7.	<b>New York Times.</b>	1606
	Obituary of Bishop Boone.	
1864, October 14.	<b>Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky</b>	1607
	Report from Peking.	
	First year in Peking.	
	Evangelistic and literary labors.	
	Common Anglican/Episcopal liturgies.	
	Mandarin Bible translation committee.	
	Schereschewsky responsible for Old Testament.	
1864, December 7.	<b>The Gospel Messenger.</b>	1609
	The Episcopal China Mission: A Failure. Parish minister comment.	
	Leave China to the Church of England.	
1864, December 7.	<b>Rev. Edward W. Syle.</b>	1609
	<b>Episcopal Jurisdiction</b> at Shanghai	
	Death of Bishop Boone.	
	Analysis of the jurisdictional issue.	
	Action needed before Anglican and Episcopal bishops are appointed.	

## **Part 21 Shanghai, 1865-1866.**

**1611-1698**

1865, January.	<b>PEC Board of Missions, Epiphany Appeal for Missions.</b>	1613
	Death of Bishop Boone.	
	Future of China Missions.	
	Hopes for Japan.	
1865, January.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee—Death of Bishop Boone.</b>	1613
	Memorial Paper on permanent record in <i>Spirit of Missions</i> .	
1865, January.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson—Funeral of Bishop Boone.</b>	1616
1865, January.	<b>Mr. A. A. Hays, Jr.—Funeral of Bishop Boone.</b>	1617
	Missionary, Divine, “Business man of recognized ability.”	
1865, January.	<b>Rev. Wong Kong Chai—Funeral of Bishop Boone.</b>	1617
	“A faithful shepherd of Christ’s sheep.”	
1865, January 7.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b>	1618
	Statement of mission affairs.	
	Extension of preaching places outside Shanghai.	
	Schereschewsky regarded as finest Chinese speaker in Peking.	
	Statistics.	

1865, January 29.	<b>Rt. Rev. William Bacon Stevens. Commemorative Sermon.</b> <b>“A Man of God Approved in Christ!”</b>	1619
1865, January 7.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith.</b> Account of Smith’s work in Shantung [Shandong] Province. Death of Parker and Holmes. Taiping depredations. A conversion story.	1638
1865, February.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Notes of journey to Soochow. New day-school at Loo-Teu. A foreign <i>Kwe-ts</i> is a ghost. Walled town of Kia-ding. Strong Catholic congregation in Kia-ding. Ruins of town destroyed by Taiping rebels. Walled town of Bang-Loong, much damaged by Imperial troops. Administrative capital of Soochow. Preaching in a temple destroyed by Taiping. General Frederick Townsend Ward, commanding Imperial troops. No obstacles of any kind to missionary work.	1640
1865, February 12.	<b>Rev. Augustus E. Hohing.</b> Journey from Cuxhaven, Germany, to China. Terrible storms. 400 ships, mostly English, lost.	1645
1865, February 24.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Journey to Hankow, 600 miles up the Yangtse River on steamer owned by David Olyphant. Fellow passengers included Rev. Dr. James Legge. City of Nankin. Arrival at Hankow. Journal of visit to Hankow. Rev. Griffith John (LMS) leading missionary in district. Return to Shanghai.	1646
1865, April.	<b>Rev. Dudley D. Smith.</b> Missionary itinerations in Shandong Province. Conversion of Leo [Liu] Shin Koong.	1649
1865, April.	<b>Ngan Yoong Kiung, Catechist and candidate for ordination.</b> Educated at Kenyon College, Gambier, Ohio. Taipings evacuate Soochow and Nankin. Population of Shanghai declined as people return to rural areas. Chinese Government sponsors Anglo-Chinese College in Shanghai. Initial leadership by Young John Allen, American missionary. Renovation of Church of our Saviour, Hongku. Testimonials for ordination signed by Thomson and Wong-Chai.	1650
1865, April 9.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee</b> <b>AMERICAN CIVIL WAR ENDS</b>	1653
1865, April 13.	<b>Rt. Rev. George Smith, retired Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong.</b> Death of Bishop Boone. Boone’s last duty in Hong Kong was to assist Smith in examining Lo Sam-yuen [Luo Shenyang), former missionary to Chinese in Australia. <b>Episcopal Jurisdiction.</b> Never a personal problem for Smith or Boone. All Chinese Anglicans to regard Boone as their bishop. Boone “occupied a prominent pastoral position among the English.” The present position of the Diocese of Victoria, Hong Kong.	1653
1865, April 17.	<b>Ngan Yoong Kiung, Catechist and candidate for ordination.</b> Congregations united for Easter services. CMS mission congregation included.	1655

	Eleven Chinese baptised. Nine Episcopal, two Anglican. Protestant missions union prayer meeting.	
1865, June.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Three Languages of China— <i>Wang Li</i> , or "Literary Language;" the <i>Kwan Hwa</i> , or "Mandarin Language;" and the <i>Tu Bah</i> , or "Colloquial of the Province." Bible Translations—Protestant. <b>Terms for God</b> debate.	1657
1865, June.	<b>Rev. John Liggins.</b> Missionary health and length of service, Canton Province. 1870-1864 service about seven years. Most spent first two years on language learning. i.e. less than five years active missionary work. Missions should avoid health risks of southern China and focus on North China. Suggestion that Episcopal Bishop move to Peking. Protestant missionary results not striking. Health always a limiting factor in missionary work.	1660
1865, June 21.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Visit to Shandong Province. 3 days by coastal ship. Travelled as a Chinese passenger. Principle and economy. Chinese fare one third of European. Friendship formed with Catholic Chinese. Chefoo [Yantai]. Only treaty port in province. Town has bad reputation. Local travel by mules or donkeys. Houses well built of stone or brick. People civil to foreigners but some exceptions noted. Visits Tung-Show. Ancient trading port. Presbyterian and Baptist missions. Result of Teaching English—training schools for commerce. Visits Mrs. Smith grave near Choo-kie.	1661
1865, October.	<b>PEC Board of Missions (10<sup>th</sup> Triennial and 30<sup>th</sup> Annual Meetings).</b> Commemorative Sermon preached at request of Foreign Committee. Summarizes report from Rev. Elliott Thomson (see April 17 note above). Anglican Deacon Dzon supervised by and assists PEC mission. Mission Statistics. Report from Rev. Samuel Schereschewsky in Peking. Local Muslim rebellions. Schereschewsky supervising Anglican Church. Schereschewsky and Rev. John Burdon (CMS) engaged in translation work. Schereschewsky member of local translation committee. Schereschewsky undertaking Old Testament translation. Foreign Committee considering removing diocese from Shanghai. Rev. Channing Williams in Japan—language learning. Christianity still official proscribed in Japan. Williams paid as pastor of foreign chapel in Nagasaki.	1664
1866, January	<b>Rev. Channing Williams,, Bishop Elect to China and Japan.</b>	1667
1866, January.	<b>PEC Board of Missions (10<sup>th</sup> Triennial and 30<sup>th</sup> Annual Meetings).</b> Rev. Channing More Williams elected Missionary Bishop to China and Japan.	1668
1866, January	<b>Rev. Channing Williams,, Bishop Elect to China and Japan.</b>	1668
1866, January	<b>Rev. Elliott H. Thomson.</b> Semi-Annual Report from Shanghai. New Preaching place at day-school in International Settlement. Loo-Tien station to be closed. Chapel at Hongku and Christ Church. Christ Church under Rev. Wong Kong Chai, assisted by Deacon Dzau (Anglican). Day-Schools working well, Numbers reduced due to departures from Shanghai. <b>Miss Fay</b> returned to PEC mission but continues oversight of CMS School. Employment of Chinese "Biblowoman." Schereschewsky in Shanghai.	1668

1868, March.	Hoong-Neok (Wu Hoong Neok) joins mission. <b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> About to return to China. Issues an “Appeal for China.” Work of missionaries: teaching, preaching, translating, and circulating the Holy Scriptures and other books, Just two PEC foreign and one Chinese clergymen. Challenges of Catholic and other Protestant missionaries. PEC work feeble. All members of PEC responsible.	1670
1868, March 24.	<b>Rev. Channing Moore Williams.</b> Enroute to U. S. Not yet accepted appointment as 2 <sup>nd</sup> Missionary Bishop.	1672
1868, April.	<b>Rev. Channing Moore Williams.</b> Emperor of Japan signs Treaties with foreign powers. Threats of force from Shogun and foreign powers. First baptism of a Japanese. Account by Rev. James Ballagh, US Dutch Reformed Church. Report from Rev. Channing Williams. More open with his evangelistic work. Japanese receptive.	1672
1866, April 5.	<b>Lydia Mary Fay</b> to Rev. Henry Venn, Secretary, CMS London. “life of a single lady is a constant sacrifice...”	1674
1866, May 22.	<b>Lydia Mary Fay</b> to Rt Rev. John Burdon, 2 <sup>nd</sup> Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong. Gender issues with CMS similar to those with PEC.	1674
1866, June.	<b>Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky PT 1.</b> Schereschewsky replies to Committee queries re importance of translation. Importance of Mandarin text of Bible. <b>Terms for God</b> debate. Rejects Shangti—“positively wrong.”	1674
1866, June.	<b>Rev. S. I. J. Schereschewsky PT 2.</b> “I am resolved to adhere to the Hebrew original as much as the nature of the Chinese language, into which it is to [be] rendered, will possibly admit.”	1676
1866, June.	<b>Rev. Wong Kong Chai [Rev. Huang Guangci].</b> Itinerant visits. Dzang Zok. Every town and village had a Catholic chapel.	1678
1866, June 4.	<b>Rev. Samuel Robbins Brown, (U.S. Dutch Reformed Church).</b> Resident at Yokohama. Ten years earlier foreign travel punished by decapitation.	1679
1866, June 29.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Work progressing well. Catechist Ting is promising Hoong Neok taking theology with Thomson and Chinese with Thomson’s teacher. Yung-kiung is active. Rev. Wong Kong Chai at Christ Church. Deacon Dzau (Anglican) “elderly man, not very active.” Mrs. Thomson supervises biblewoman [boo-boo] and has active women’s work. <b>Miss Fay</b> continues with CMS Boys’s School and now supervises a PEC day-school. Visit of Bishop (elect) Williams. Forms “Chinese Native Missionary Society” in Shanghai. Thomson very busy in mission work and among expatriates. Only American Episcopal minister in Shanghai. Mission Statistics.	1679
1868, June 30	<b>Rev. Augustus C. Hohing.</b> Arrived Shanghai 27 June 1866. Unpleasant voyage of 165 days.	1681
1868, July.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Character of the late Bishop Boone. “Not a great scholar, nor a great theologian, nor of wonderful mental endowments.” “Elements in his Christian manhood which, in combination and effect, constituted him	1681

Japa

	<p>the man of his day for the first Episcopal head of the mission to China.”</p> <p>Boone’s singleness of purpose.</p> <p>Offered Southern bishopric but refused.</p> <p>Refused medical advice to leave China.</p> <p>Bishop Boone’s earnestness in faith and conduct.</p> <p>His spiritual mindedness.</p> <p>“Wonderfully gifted in conversation... thoughts that breathed and words that burned.”</p> <p>His faith.</p> <p>Continued his work “ever liable to a sudden death.”</p> <p>His catholicity. Intimate with other Protestants.</p> <p>Warmth of affection for family, friends and Chinese.</p> <p>A practical man. “Clear seeing” in business matters.</p> <p>Complete separation of personal and mission finances.</p>	
1868, August.	<p><b>Rev. Robert Nelson. Terms for God debate.</b></p> <p>See Schereschewsky letter at 1866 June, Pts I &amp; II.</p> <p>Nelson questions Schereschewsky’s use of Tien Chu.</p> <p>Catholic and Protestant ideas of “God”.</p>	1685
1868, August.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>3000 Protestant Christians in China. 200 Chinese in Christian work.</p>	1687
1868, August.	<p><b>Rev. Elliott Thomson</b></p> <p>Recreational leave in Chefoo [Yantai].</p> <p>Hoong Neok unequalled in his outreach skills.</p> <p>Rev. Wong Kong Chair performing effectively.</p> <p>Letter to Thomson from Yung Kiung Ngan-Chinese leading work in Shanghai.</p> <p>Biblewoman’s niece—possible abduction. Use of foreign courts.</p>	1687
1866, October.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Consecration of Bishop Channing Moore Williams, 3 October 1866.</p>	1689
1866, October 3.	<p><b>PEC Board of Missions.</b></p> <p>Consecration of Bishop Channing Moore Williams.</p>	1689
1866, October 25.	<p><b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b></p> <p>Report on Shanghai.</p> <p>Letter from Yoong Kiung Ngan to an American friend.</p> <p>Continuing theology studies under Thomson.</p> <p>Duties: talking to the people in the chapel, catechizing a mission school, and, in the absence of Rev. Mr. Thomson, taking charge of money matters, etc.</p> <p>“China is no longer a home to me.”</p> <p>“People look on Christianity as something novel and foreign.”</p> <p>Chinese “government is rotten to the core.”</p>	1690
1866, November.	<p><b>“W. H. H.” Sacramento.</b></p> <p>“Heathenism in a Christian Land,” I</p> <p>Large Chinese population in California.</p> <p>Chinese ‘Generally preferred to Irish or the colored.’”</p> <p>Large number of young men.</p> <p>Most come as contract workers and promised return passage, alive or dead.</p> <p>No Chinese wives or daughters.</p> <p>Chinese festival in Sacramento condemned.</p>	1692
1866, November.	<p><b>“W. H. H.” Sacramento, Chinese Celebrations.</b></p> <p>“Heathenism in a Christian Land,” II</p> <p>Do Chinese really believe?</p> <p>Cost of festival c\$2000 paid for by Chinese donations.</p> <p>Can Chinese be Christianized in California?</p> <p>Rev. Edward Syle stated to have said at California Episcopal Convention that the evangelization of Chinese in California “scarcely a gleam of hope.”</p> <p>Failure of Baptist mission under Rev. Jehu Shuck, former China missionary.</p> <p>“Every other denomination that has tried has also failed.”</p> <p>Comments on Chinese community life in Sacramento/California.</p>	1694

1866, December 26.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Joint Episcopal/Anglican Christmas celebrations at Hongkou.	1697
<b>Part 22 Shanghai, 1867.</b>		<b>1699-1724</b>
1867, January/	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Review of recent mission events and issues. 100 Chinese communicants in Shanghai. Bible and Prayer Book being translated into classical Chinese. Hope to reopen Boys' and Girls' Boarding Schools in Shanghai. <b>Miss Fay</b> ready to work in PEC school. Need to open new stations in interior. Opportunities in Japan.	1700
1867, January.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Rev. Robert Nelson and family return to China. Departure from San Francisco by American steamer. Nelson son remains in US.	1700
1867, January.	<b>Rev. Augustus C. Hohing.</b> Working in Peking. Plan for a boarding-school in Peking.	1701
1867, January 4.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Consecration of Bishop Williams News of return of Rev. Robert Nelson and family. Able to stay in any Treaty Port. Any city for at least 30 days. Visit to Chefoo. Studying Mandarin dialect. Missionary house purchases obstructed by literati in Tung-Chow. Thomson assisted US Consul in Chefoo. Shantung Peninsula very healthy location. Itineration by Rev. Wong Kong Chai. Itineration by Deacon Dzau (CMS). Schools doing well in Shanghai under Chinese leadership. Rev Wong Kong Chai and Deacon Dzau at Christ Church. CMS withdraws from Shanghai. Deacon Dzau and congregation with PEC. Mrs. Thomson active in women's work. Hoong Neok progressing in theological studies. Catechists Tin (finest preacher) and Wong (best Chinese scholar). Native Chinese Missionary Society has 53 members. Also Womens' Society. Boys' and Girls' schools operating. Mission staff. Chai, Dzaw, Hoong-niok, Yung Kiung, myself, Ting and Wong at Shanghai, Mr. Schereschewsky and Mr. Hohing at Peking; we hope, also, Mr. Nelson. Mission is larger than in Bishop Boone's time. Mission statistics.	1701
1867, February 8.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> China and mission field closer than ever as communications improve. Nelson family in China less than 50 travelling days after leaving New York. Pacific Mail Steamship Co provides missionary passages at half-cost.	1705
1867, February 8.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> As above. Thomson has carried heavy burden. Mary Nelson caught mild case of small-pox in Yokohama. Attended meeting of all Chinese Protestant members in Shanghai.	1705
1867, February 9.	<b>Rev. Augustus C. Hohing.</b> Now four months in Peking. Two months preparing housing. Language learning. Learning Peking Mandarin. One teacher incompetent. Second a thief,	1706

- third is working well. Thirty characters memorised daily. Repeated several hundred times to master tone and accent.  
 Planning for chapel and schools.  
 Need for medical knowledge. LMS hospital crowded daily.  
 Much poverty. Beggars abound. Dead children in streets.  
 Robbed by servants.
- 1867, March 8. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1707  
 Thomson travelling to and Kuikiang and then Hankow, 600 miles up Yangtse River.  
 Prospect for mission station at Kiukiang.
- 1867, April 22. **Rev. Augustus C. Hohing.** 1708  
 Need for American minister for Americans attending mission church Hongkou.  
 Death of 3 year old son from scarlet fever on 11 April.  
 Death of Mrs. Hohing three weeks later, 29 April.  
 Infant girl being cared for by Mr. and Mrs. Goodrich (ABCFM).  
 Older daughter initially with Mr. and Mrs. Rutherford Alcock at British Legation but now with Mrs. Bridgman.
- 1867, undated. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1709  
 Schereschewsky visits ancient Jewish community at Kaifeng.  
 Importance of mission boarding schools. Hopes to reopen.
- 1867, June 29. **Rev. Elliott Thomson.** 1710  
 Semi-Annual Report from Shanghai.  
**Miss Fay** rejoins PEC mission.  
 Death of Mrs. Hohing.  
 Nelson supervising studies of Yung Kiung. Active ministerial roles.  
**Miss Fay** resumes Chinese language studies with Ting.  
 In charge of Girls' School in Chinese city.  
 Still supervising CMS Boys' School.  
**Mrs. Thomson** continues women's work.  
 2nd Bible woman appointed. Worked as teacher under Mrs. Keith.  
 Yung Kiung studying theology under Nelson.  
 Hoong Neok studying under Thomson. Supervises Native Mission Schools.  
 Thomson makes country tour without the necessary passport, no trouble.  
 Country open, mission needs organisation and planning.  
 Mr. John Fryer (ex CMS) conducts Cantonese services at Christ Church.  
 Mission statistics.
- 1867, July 6. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1712  
 Overview of tasks as above.  
 Yung Kiung "prospect for usefulness...much above...any other."  
 Cantonese services, John Fryer.  
**Miss Fay.**
- 1867, August. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1713  
 U. P. Suvoong, ex Boys' Boarding School, at Kenyon College, Ohio.<sup>49</sup>
- 1867, August 15. **Rev. Robert Nelson.** 1713  
 Christ Church. Faithfulness of Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Huang Guangci).  
 Girls' School supervised by **Miss Fay**.  
 "Kind and amount of abuse" by old blind people receiving alms.  
 Church of our Saviour, Hongkou.  
 Renting of premises of Boys' School and Girls' School, Hongkou.  
 (Financial crisis of American Civil War.)  
 General review of work of mission.  
 Hongkou has very big Cantonese community.

49 Vung Piau (or Piang) Suvoong, U.P., Virginia Theological Seminary, Columbia University. later worked with Presbyterian Mission, Shanghai.  
 Online — <http://www.zoominfo.com/p/Cornelius-Suvoong/1410153828>  
 See also <http://fairfaxstories.sharepoint.com/Pages/FcaahpEssayFoleyCorazonChineseAmericans.aspx>

1867, September 21.	Hongkou general environment influenced by foreign “drinking houses.” <b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b>	1715	<b>Mis</b>
1867, October 1.	Hope to reopen Boys’ and Girls’ Schools. <b>William Boone Jr, Virginia Theological Seminary.</b>	1717	
1867, October 15.	VTs Missionary Society. Contributions for China and Africa. <b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b>	1717	
1867, November 13..	Death of Anglican deacon Dzau on 8 October. <b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b>	1717	
1867, November 26..	<b>Miss Susan M. Waring</b> arrived 13 November. 53 days from New York. <b>Rev. Wong Kong Chai.</b>	1718	
1867, December 9.	Death of Anglican deacon Dzau on 8 October, 49 years old. Made deacon in Trinity Anglican Church 1861. Siau Wong Miao Temple—magic fountain fed by hidden pipe. <b>Miss Susan M. Waring.</b>	1719	
1867, December 13.	Report of Missionary Conference, Paper by Rev. Robert Nelson. Parents determine children’s religious beliefs. <b>US Minister Vanvalkenburgh to Secretary Seward.</b>	1720	
	Status of Tycoon (Shogun)—1.		

## **Part 23 Shanghai, 1868.**

**1725-1756**

1868, January.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Missionary staff: Rev. Robert and Mrs. Nelson, Miss Waring. Return of Miss Fay to PEC mission. Arrival of Bishop Channing Moore Williams. No funds received from U.S. during Civil War. \$15,000 from local funds (donations, sale of Boys’ School).	1726	
1868, January.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Chinese Scepticism about religion generally, and Christianity.	1726	
1868, January 14.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> Bishop Channing Moore Williams arrives 14 January.	1727	
1868, January 15.	<b>Bishop Williams.</b> Usual travel time San Francisco to Yokohama, now 22 days. Remarkable changes in Japan. Restoration of Empeior and defeat of Shogun. Japanese Daimyo (Princes) supporting Emperor against Shogun. Evangelism possible if combined with education, especially English language etc. Williams grieved not to have Episcopal missionary in Japan.	1727	
1868, January 16.	<b>US Minister Vanvalkenburgh to Secretary Seward.</b> Status of Tycoon (Shogun)—2.	1730	
1868, January 25.	<b>Bishop Williams.</b> China. Imperial Edict prohibits rebuilding of temples, other than Confucian. Officials forbid idol processions. Officials order toleration for all Christians.	1734	
1868, January 27.	<b>Secretary Seward to US Minister Vanvalkenburgh.</b>	1735	
1868, January.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee: The Prospect in Japan.</b> Return of Bishop Williams. Situation in Japan. Restoration of Emperor and defeat of Shogun. Japan and Christianity considered. Situation in China. Senior Chinese provincial officials banning idol processions. Apparent Imperial ban on rebuilding temples, other than Confucian.	1735	



1868, February.	<b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b> China. Revision of Treaties. Missionaries may reside anywhere in China. Japan. Edict against Christainity. Severe punishment for converts.	1737	
1868, February 24.	<b>Bishop Williams.</b> China. Mr. Anson Burlingame, former US Minister, appointed to represent Chinese Government to Treaty Powers. Burlingame’s attitudes to missions supportive. Chinese Prime Minister (Wun Tsiang) well disposed to missionaries. Jesuits reclaiming lost properties. Japan. Emperor triumphant over Shogun. Need for Protestant missionaries. Bishop Williams and Rev. Robert Nelson seek mission site inland.	1738	
1868, April 15.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson.</b> Bishop Williams in Peking. <b>Miss Fay</b> reopens Boys’ Boarding School. PEC Hospital “very useful.” Rev. Wong Kong Chai investigates mission site at Soochow.	1740	
1868, May 3.	<b>Death of Robert Boone at Halifax, Va.</b>	1740	
1868, May 25.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Bishop Williams ‘pretty active episcopate.’ 2200 miles travel in China. Planning for new mission stations in Yangtse Valley Bp. Williams confirms 38 Chinese and 8 foreigners. Bp. Williams visits Peking. Ngan Yung Kiung made deacon. Bp. Williams baptises 2 children of Chinese clergyman Tong. Bp. Williams confirms 3 foreigners. Rev. Elliott Thomson and Mrs. Thomson take leave in Ningbo. Rev. Samuel Schereschewky and Mrs. Schereschewsky (formerly Miss Susan Waring) return to Peking.	1740	
1868, August.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson, Pt 1.</b> First visit to Ningpo [Ningbo]. Ningpo a flourishing mission field.	1741	
1868, August.	<b>Rev. Elliott Thomson, Pt 2.</b> First visit to Ningpo [Ningbo] Location of trades on specific streets. Temple of goddess of seamen “handsomest I have ever seen in China.” Mosque, Ningpo. Other temples and rituals. Character of Missionary Work in China. Missionaries “complete barbarians.”	1743	
1868, September 7.	<b>Bishop Williams.</b> Attack on Rev. Augustus Hohing by examination candidates. Williams asks US Consul for gunboat. Attacks on English missionaries at Yang-Chow. Anti-Christian placards	1745	
1868, September 7.	<b>Rev. Augustus Hohing.</b> with Deacon Yung Kiung Ngan. Daughter staying with Mrs. Nelson. Chinese houses have mud-floors and are constantly damp. Attached by students on 10 August. Mandarin understood by everyone.	1748	Ope
1868, September 16.	<b>Rev. Robert Nelson.</b> Freedom to establish Christian missions. Schereschewsky expelled from Kaifeng.	1748	

- English missionaries expelled from Yangchow-fu.  
Both expulsions managed by literati.<sup>50</sup>  
Missionaries urgently needed but funds insufficient to support them.  
Baptism of Chinese widow and two of four children.  
Baptism seen by some Chinese as guarantee of financial support.
- 1868, December. **Bishop Williams: Report for 1868.** 1750  
Work of clergy—Thomson, Nelson, Wong.  
**Miss Fay** reopens Boy's Boarding School. Some funds from England.  
PEC hospital/dispensary funded locally by Chinese and foreigners.  
Urgent need of medical doctor to work hospital.  
Schereschewsky in Peking, Continuing translation work.  
Opens Episcopal chapel.  
Rev. John Burdon and Rev. S. Scherechewsky produce Mandarin version of  
Book of Common Prayer, drawing on British and American books.  
New station at Wuchang. Rev. A. Hohing and Deacon Yung Kiung Ngan.  
Yung Kiung Ngan ordained deacon 19 May 1868 in Christ Church.  
Mission statistics.  
Chinese.  
Foreign.  
Japan.
- 1868, December 8. **Bishop Williams.** 1752  
Urgent need of assistant for Rev. Augustus Hohing.  
Bishop Williams visits Japan.  
Importance of new authority of the Japanese Emperor.  
Forming a Japanese Constitutional Monarchy.  
Creation of a Japanese bicameral parliament.  
Shinto possible state religion. Attacks on Buddhism.  
Bishop Williams calls for a missionary clergyman and a medical doctor.  
Doctor more important than missionary in gaining contacts.  
Other Protestant missions being established.
- 1868, December 8. **Bishop Williams.** 1754  
Letter from US Minister Vanvalkenburgh re toleration of Christianity.
- Part 24, Shanghai, 1869.** 1757-1794
- 1869, January 1. **Rev. Augustus Hohing.** 1758  
Expatriate celebrations of Christmas in Hankow.  
Language learning is lifelong in China.  
Wooden floors in Hohing's house.
- 1869, January 8. **Bishop Williams.** 1758  
Repetition of need for more missionaries.  
Assistant for Hohing at Wuchang.  
Missionary doctor and clergyman required for Japan.  
Fifty confirmations in past twelve months.
- 1869, February 18. **Miss Lydia Mary Fay.** 1759  
Boys' Boarding School at Shanghai.  
Three boys supported by ladies of Pittsburgh, Pa.  
Hope to expand school from present fourteen to twenty scholars.  
Bishop Williams personally supporting one boy.  
Accommodation inadequate.  
Supervises four day-schools.  
Fay and Mrs. Nelson supervise women's day-school at Kong-wan.  
Fay assisting in missionary work among older women.  
Fay visits ex-students and growing Christian community.

50 Correspondence Respecting the Attack on British Protestant Missionaries at Yang-chow-foo, August 1868, in British Parliamentary Papers, *Missionaries in China, 1868-1872*, (Cleveland Oh, 1915).

- Endorses views of Bishop Boone on teaching English to Chinese.  
Speaking English gives "Position and influence."
- 1869, February 18. **Miss Lydia Mary Fay.** 1760  
 Importance of a Knowledge of Chinese Literature.  
 Essential to "preach the Gospel acceptably and effectively."  
 Reflections on Buddhism and Buddhists.  
 "The women are all Buddhists."  
 Older men and women are Buddhists.  
 Buddhist asceticism.  
 Fay visits old Buddhist daily.  
 Importance of Christian schools.
- 1869, March. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1762  
 Emperor Tung Che issues Edict of Religious Liberty.
- 1869, March 13. **Rev. Augustus Hohing.** 1762  
 Hohing's teacher, "Peter" Dzan Si fang, 27 years old, baptised.  
 Harmonium needed.
- 1869, March 13. **Rev. Yung Kiung Ngan.** 1765  
 Anti-Christian placards in Wuchang.  
 No houses to be sold or leased to foreigners.  
 Hohing and Yung threatened with eviction.  
 Three classes of population in Wuchang.  
 Literati.  
 Large number of hopeful mandarins-elect.  
 Characteristic of literati class is self-importance.  
 Learning of China is self-sufficient.  
 Trades-people.  
 Generally friendly.  
 No time to listen-work seven days.  
 Poor.  
 Majority of missionary audience.  
 Mental obtuseness.  
 Entertainment most important.  
 Difficulties of mission work.  
 People listen to foreigners out of curiosity. Do not listen to a Chinese.  
 Examples of responses to Christian preaching.  
 Books sold to give them a value.
- 1869, March 17. **Bishop Williams.** 1767  
 Urgent need for another missionary at Wuchang.  
 Hohing's teacher, "Peter" Dzan Si fang [Tsau-Seu-Sang], 27 years old, baptised.  
 Nine months after Hohing arrived in Wuchang.  
 Service lasted from 10 am to 6 pm. Long debate with Taoist.  
 Plans for chapel and day-school at Hankow.  
 Some converts from Shanghai now in Hankow.  
 Rev. Elliott Thomson to take home leave.  
 Bishop to visit Peking and Japan.
- 1869, April. **Foreign Missions Committee.** 1769  
 Notes by Rev. John Liggins. Des  
 Missionaries in Peking.  
 Missionary assistance to United States diplomats.  
 Work of the Missionaries.  
 Entire Bible available in Mandarin.  
 Contribution of Rev. S. Schereschewsky and Rev. John Burdon (CMS).
- 1869, April. **Bishop Williams.** 1773  
 Letter to children published in *Carrier Dove*.
- 1869, May 17. **Bishop Williams.** 1773  
 More confirmations  
 All day-school teachers now Christians. First

1869, June.	<p>Four Chinese women confirmed Bishop Williams to live at Osaka when in Japan.</p> <p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Catholic priests and laity (c100) murdered in Sichuan Province. No Protestant missions in Sichuan province. Possibly linked to treaty agreement to return Jesuit properties confiscated 200 years earlier.</p> <p>Widespread opposition to all Christians from literati. Widespread opposition to all things foreign, e.g, telegraphs, rail, etc.</p>	1774
1869, June.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Rev. Samuel R. J Hoyt, Griswold College, Davenport, Iowa, appointed to China.</p> <p>More missionaries available to be sent when funds allow.</p>	1775
1869, June.	<p><b>Rev. Augustus Hohing.</b></p> <p>Existing house and chapel in Wuchang poorly located. Day-school has irregular attendance between 10 and 25 children. New chapel opened in Hankow in good location. Day-school to be opened in Hankow as soon as possible. Better housing needed for missionaries. Present house damp. Rev Yung Kiung Ngan working well.</p>	1776
1869, July 19.	<p><b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay.</b></p> <p>Hundreds of women in need of hospital care. Boys' Boarding School—20 scholars. Six boys baptised. Nine confirmed. Ages from 14 to 18 years. Miss Fay supervises 5 day-schools. Rev. Edward Syle supervises boarding school for blind Chinese girls. Fay tells story of a blind girl—A Ne. A Ne learns through classroom immersion.</p>	1777
1869, July 21.	<p><b>Bishop Williams. Second Annual Report.</b></p> <p>Rev. Elliott Thomson and family on leave in US from March, Busy work load for Rev. Robert Nelson. Rev. Wong Kong Chai in charge of Christ Church &amp; CMS Mission Church. Miss Fay's Boys' Boarding School to provide future clergy and catechists. Miss Fay active in visiting families etc. Hospital building erected. Dispensary 3 days weekly-up to 600 treated daily. 15000 treated 1868. Three voluntary doctors, MacGowan, Jamieson, Henderson. Kong Wan station. Ting, catechist and candidate for ordination. Decent chapel needed. Location too noisy. Funded entirely by U.S. navy officer. Missions more successful in rural areas away from influences of Treaty Ports. Hoong Neok is very busy, day-schools, Chinese assistant at Hospital etc. Wuchang. Great prospects. Peking. Rev. S. Scherechewsky continues translation work. Shanghai. Great support from Mr. A. A. Hayes of Messrs. Olyphant &amp; Co. Manages mission finances.</p>	1779
1869, August.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Rev. William Jones Boone Jr, appointed missionary to China. Rev. Elliott Thomson and family arrived U.S. end of May 1869.</p>	1782
1869, August 17.	<p><b>Bishop Williams.</b></p> <p>Satisfaction at appointments of Hoyt and Boone Jr.</p>	1782
1869, September.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Bishop Williams has rented house in Osaka. Repeats call for clergyman and medical doctor for Japan.</p>	1782
1869, September.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>China, Hostility to Missionaries.</p>	1783

1869, October.	<p>Opposition coming from literati and officials.</p> <p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>General Overview of China Mission.</p> <p>At least 10 clergymen needed.</p> <p>Shanghai. From 1845 to 1869, 282 adults baptized.</p> <p><b>Miss Lydia Mary Fay.</b></p> <p>"No one in China," writes Mr. Nelson, " is so competent."</p> <p>Boys' Boarding School independently funded.</p> <p>Rev. Wong Kong Chai, faithful, efficient.</p> <p>ABCFM missionary praises PEC missionary efforts.</p>	1783
1869, October.	<p><b>Rev. S. Schereschewsky.</b></p> <p>"Time is almost wholly occupied with translation."</p> <p>Progress report on New Testament.</p> <p>Progress report on Prayer Book.</p> <p>Conducts Sunday services in Episcopal Chapel.</p> <p>Mrs. Schereschewsky working with women.</p>	1786
1869, October 4.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee</b></p> <p>Rev. S. R. J. and Mrs. Hoyt embark for China.</p>	1787
1869, November.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee</b></p> <p>Importance of medical missions.</p> <p>Lay-Agency (i.e., doctors-male and female) is now required.</p> <p>At home the lay-element is effective and appreciated.</p>	1787
1869, November.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee. 34<sup>th</sup> Annual Report</b></p> <p>China. General Review of items as above.</p> <p>Rev. Wong Kong Chai in ill-health.</p> <p>Mission statistics.</p> <p>Japan.</p> <p>Bishop Williams residing at Osaka.</p> <p>Foreign Missions Committee sought State Department help to have anti-Christian laws repealed.</p> <p>Bishop Williams asked Japanese Government to repeal anti-Christian laws.</p>	1788
1869, November.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Rev. W. J. and Mrs. Boone Jr. farewelled.</p> <p>Address regarding Bishop Boone.</p>	1792
1869, November 1.	<p><b>Foreign Missions Committee.</b></p> <p>Rev. W. J. and Mrs. Boone Jr. leave New York for China.</p>	1794

# ILLUSTRATIONS

## Part 1 INTRODUCTION.

Christian writing, French Image of St. Matthew, Exeter Cathedral, England.	iii
Bishop William Jones Boone.	v
Locations in the Old Chinese City of Shanghai.	xi
Foreign and Chinese Locations in Old Chinese City of Shanghai.	xii
Christ Church, American Episcopal Chinese Mission Church in Shanghai.	xii

## Part 2. THE CHINA VISION.

The Birthplace of Foreign Missions 1806.Mission Park, Williamstown, Mass.	3
China Inland Mission Schools, Chefoo.	8
According to the Ideas of our Missionary Maniacs.	14
Commodore James Biddle	15
Commodore Matthew Perry.	15
Chinese Amah [Nanny] with Missionary Children.	20
G. E. "Chinese" Morrison with Servants, Beijing.	23
Servants of the American Consulate, Foochow [Fuzhou].	23
Archdeacon John R. Wolfe's (CMS) House in Fuzhou, Fujian Province.	25
House of Rev. J. V. N. Talmage, American Reformed Church Mission, Amoy.	25
American Missionary Compound in Swatow.	26
English Baptist House, Guangdong (Canton).	26
The City Wall and Gates of the Old Chinese City of Shanghai	27
Key Chinese Sites in the Old Chinese City of Shanghai.	28
Foreign and Chinese Locations in the old Chinese City of Shanghai.	28
Anglican Diocesan Compound, Siangnang, Honan Province.	29
American Southern Presbyterian Compound, Jiangyin, Yangtse River Valley.	29
An Anglican (CMS) Missionary Family in Honan Province, c 1900.	30
Sydenstricker Family, American Presbyterian Mission.	31
A foreign style American Seventh Day Baptist house near Shanghai, c1846.	31
American Methodist Episcopal Mission Compound, Kucheng, Fujian Province	32
Layout of the American Methodist Episcopal Compound at Kucheng.	32
Rev. Jonathan Edwards.	44
Rev. H. B. Macartney Jr., of Melbourne.	45
William Carey.	47
Rev. Robert Morrison.	49
Rev. Elijah Bridgman.	49
Rt. Rev. William Jones Boone.	49
Rev. Jehu Lewis Shuck and Mrs. Henrietta Hall Shuck.	50
Dr. Peter Parker.	50
Rev. Judson Dwight Collins.	50
Karl Gutzlaff.	52, 55
Lo Sam-yuen (Luo Shenyuan 羅深遠).	54
Anglo-Chinese Conference, Chusan, 4 July 1840. Karl Gutzlaff in centre.	56
Russell & Co, Shanghai Office.	58
A Contemporary Image of the "Empress of China".	59
The China Tea Trade c1800.	62
Foreigners Control the Export Tea Trade.	62
Rev. (later Bishop) William Banister, CMS.	63
Archdeacon John Richard Wolfe, CMS>	65
A Yangtse River Passenger Boat c1895.	71
A Mountain Pathway near Kuling.	71
Nellie and Topsy Saunders of Melbourne. (CM Association, Victoria.	80
Frank Burden, China Inland Mission.	80

	The queue was tacked into the cap.	81
	Rev. William Banister and female Anglican Missionaries, Fujian Province.	84
	The Anglo-American Relationship.	92
	Commodore Josiah Tattnall.	93
	CMS Eucharist, Ningpo, c1856.	95
	Black “Geneva” gown.	96
	Anglican Robes and Preaching Scarf or Tippet.	96
	Anglican Alb and Stole.	96
	Rt. Rev. Charles McIlvaine.	100
	Episcopal Church Flag.	100
	Scottish Saltire (national flag)	100
	United States Flags, 1861, 1865.	106
	Confederate Flags, 1863, 1865.	106
	North and South, 1862.	107
	Notice of Secession of South Carolina from the Charleston <i>Mercury</i> , December 20, 1860.	107
	Secretary of State William H. Seward to Abraham Lincoln, March 15, 1861.	108
	The United States East Asia Squadron on China Station, 1860-1861.	111
	1861, April 12, Fort Sumter, South Carolina.	114
	Frank Burden and Joanne Webster, China Inland Mission.	120
	Carrie Nation.	122
	A Chinese Village School.	130
	Curriculum in Fujian Anglican Day Schools, c 1893.	131
	A European Artist’s Impression of a Chinese Christian Day-School.	133
	Rt. Rev. Jackson Kemper.	143
<b>Part 3</b>	<b>THE BEGINNING.</b>	
	Rev. Dr. James Milnor.	160
	Gravestone of the Rev. Augustus Francis Lyde.	162
	Leang Afa	170
	Karl Gutzlaff.	173
	The Founding Bishops of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the U.S.A.	182
	St. Helena Episcopal Church, Beaufort, South Carolina.	184
	Chancellor Henry William De Saussure.	185
<b>Part 4</b>	<b>JAVA, 1835-1839.</b>	
	Rev. Henry Lockwood in Old Age (c90 years).	208
	Memorial Tablet for Sarah Lockwood.	211
<b>Part 5</b>	<b>AMOY, 1839-1843.</b>	
	Royal Irish Regiment Captures Amoy.	261
	Rev. David Abeel, American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions.	264
	Amoy, From the Outer Anchorage.	266
	Kulangsu Island.	267
	Panoramic View of Amoy and Harbour showing Kulangsu Island.	269
	Abeel House, Xiamen. (Where Sally Boone was originally buried).	263
	Rev. Vincent Stanton, Colonial Chaplain, Hong Kong.	301
	St. John’s Cathedral, Hong Kong.	302
	Rt. Rev. George Smith, First Bishop of the Anglican Diocese of Hong Kong.	303
<b>Part 6</b>	<b>BISHOP BOONE, 1843-1844.</b>	
	Rt. Rev. Stephen Elliott, Bishop of Georgia.	320
<b>Part 7</b>	<b>SHANGHAI, 1845-1847.</b>	
	Rev. Samuel Robbins Brown, American Board of Commisrs of Foreign Missions.	341
	Shanghai-Shoes covered with velvety mold.	345

Chinese Artist Lam Qua and Rev. Peter Parker.	347
Great Western Gate of Canton.	348
American Hong, No 2, Canton, c1845.	349
Rev. George Smith, Church Missionary Society.	349
Chinese River Boats.	351
American Hong and Garden, Canton, c1845.	353
Rt. Rev. Alexander Viets Griswold.	356
The City Wall and Gates of the old Chinese City of Shanghai.	362
Street Scene in Old Chinese Walled City of Shanghai.	362
Street Scene in Canton.	362
Rev. Walter M. Lowrie, American Presbyterian.	363
Rt. Rev. William Boone. Mrs. Phoebe Elliott Boone, William Boone Jr. c1846	365
Mary Ann Aldersey, Independent English single woman missionary, Ningpo.	367
Bethel Mission Ship for Seamen, Shanghai, c 1860.	375
Blind Women.	378
Japanese drawing of SS Morrison, private trading vessel to Japan. 1837.	382
USS Vincennes (left) and USS Columbus in Yeddo Bay, c20 June-15 July 1846.	383
English Consul, Captain Balfour.	387
New English Consul, Mr. Rutherford Alcock.	387
Chinese drawing of person with smallpox.	395
Man with Pet Birds in Cage.	395
The Kow Tow	397
Shanghai. Opium Receiving Hulk and Crowded Chinese Sampans.	401
Daoist Gods. Yaon, Shun and Yu.	402
Dragon Lantern.	415

## **Part 8 SHANGHAI, 1848-1849.**

The American Settlement, Hongkew.	457
Will's Bridge, Shanghai, 1856.	459
Shanghai in 1851.	460
The Episcopal Mission Buildings at Hongkou, c1855. (Annotated).	462
Christian Missions in the Old Walled City of Shanghai. (Annotated).	463
Lydia Mary Fay with "Her Boys." c 1867. (Etching)	464
Ding Fu Gong, A Chinese God of Wealth.	465
Chinese Water Carrier.	467
A 19 <sup>th</sup> Century Group of Buddhist Priestsgs—Bonzes.	467
Professional Beggars.	473
Destitute Rural Peasant and Granddaughter. Catholic mission postcard.	473
Chinese Beggars.	473
Temple of Confucius, Shanghai.	477
Children's Bodies from the streets of Shanghai, 1847.	479
A Tower for disposal of unwanted, usually female, babies, c1900.	480
Modern Afterlife Money—Today referred to as "Hell Money" or "Ghost Money."	481
Goddess of Mercy, (Guan Yin).	483
Bambooning—Chinese punishment.	463
"Three Character Classic" or "Timetrical Classic." Cover.	493
Kwan-te (Guandi) Chinese God of War, Friendship and Honour.	494
Opium Shop.	497
Tract: "The Two Friends", Cover.	510
Anti-Christian Tract: "The Pig Sect Gouging the Eyes." <sup>51</sup>	522
The Lord's Prayer, Ten Commandments, Apostles Creed Boards.	
King's Chapel, Boston, a former Anglican Church, now Unitarian.	525
The Apostles Creed in Chinese.	525
The Apostles Creed in English. (Book of Common Prayer, 1662).	

51 See the most influential anti-Christian Tracts in 19C China at Welch, Ian, Flower Mountain Murders, Pt 10 - pp.1083-1150, Anti-Christian Cartoons. Online 1 January 2013 at—<http://hdl.handle.net/1885/7273>



The Ten Commandments in Chinese.	526
The Ten Commandments. King James Version.	526
Chinese Feast of Lanterns.	535
Blind son of Rev. Edward W. Syle—Rev. Henry Winter Syle.	536
Examples of Chinese Official Dress.	538
Wen Miao Confucian Temple in the late 19 <sup>th</sup> century.	538
Travelling by River Boat in the Shanghai Region.	541
The Bridgman school in Wong Ka Modur, Shanghai.	542
Woosung Village	546
Opium “Receiving” Ships, Shanghai	547
Opium Tins—Retail sale.	548
Rev. Robert H. Cobbold, Church Missionary Society.	550
Grave Goods—Paper Offerings.	557
Temple Guardians (Temple idols)	558
USS Preble.	559
Strings of copper “cash.”	559
USS Plymouth.	560
Rev. Judson Dwight Collins, American Methodist Episcopal Mission.	561
Missionary in Sedan Chair.	569
Prisoners in Cangues, Shanghai.	569
“Christ Church,” The Episcopal Mission Church in old Shanghai, 1849.	596
<b>Part 9. SHANGHAI, 1850-1851.</b>	
Mrs. Bridgman’s School for Girls, Wongka Modur, Shanghai.	618
Mrs. Bridgman and her students. c1878.	622
Chinese Silk Shop, Guangzhou (Canton) c 1825.	630
Rev. Dr. James Legge.	631
Miss Caroline Phebe Tenney.	643
Mr. David Olyphant, New York Merchant.	659
Rt. Rev. George Smith, (First Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong. Images 1844, Consecration Portrait 1849, 1864.	659
China Squadron, Royal Navy, 1859.	679
Rev. Robert Nelson.	682
French National Ship <i>Capriceieuse</i> (Canadian Postage Stamp)	715
Opium Receiving Ships (Hulks), Shanghai, c1860.	717
The Rev. Wong Kong Chai (Rev. Huang Guangci).	732
“Goblet’ Pulpit of type used in Episcopal Mission Church at Hongkou.	733
Rev. John Winn Quarterman.	739
Seven Storied Pagoda, Ningpo.	739
Miss Aldersey’s School, Ningpo. (inset, Miss Aldersey)	741
Rev. William A. P. Martin (US Presbyterian)	746
Sacred Island of Pootoo.	746
Rev. Divie B. McCartee and Mrs. McCartee.	746
Mrs. Henrietta Shuck.	749
Rev. William Muirhead.	750
<b>Part 10. SHANGHAI, 1852-1853.</b>	
Episcopal Missionary Buildings at Hongkou, c1855.	767
Flag of Hawaii.	769
The Natural Language of he Faculties (Phrenology).	772
A Tea-Chest.	786
USS Plymouth.	786
The Wall of the Chinese City of Shanghai.	792
The Church of our Saviour, Hongkou.	799
Ningpo Guild Hall (Ziming Gongsuo) built 1668.	801
Sanshan Guild Hall, For Fujian Residents of Shanghai.	801

Sailing Ship Witchcraft.	802
Execution by strangling (garrotte)	820
Challenges to the Qing Dynasty in the 19 <sup>th</sup> Century.	828
The Course of the Grand Canal, Hangzhou-Shanghai to Beijing.	840
Aerial View of the Grand Canal Today, Hangzhou-Shanghai-Beijing.	841
Commodore Matthew Perry.	861
Miaotzu Warriors.	866
USS Susquehanna.	873
Foreign troops confront Chinese Rebels.	874
Hong Kong Island, from Kowloon.	886
HMS Hermes.	887
<b>Part 11. SHANGHAI, 1854-1855.</b>	
Hung-Shew-Tsuen (Hong Xiuqua), or Tae-Ping-Wong.	898
Commodore Perry's "United States Squadron."	911
Japanese Woodcut of Perry's Fleet.	912
USS Powhatan in Tokyo Bay.	912
President Fillmore.	913
The Great Seal of the United States.	914
Commodore Perry meets Japanese Official at Edo.	914
Artist's Impression of Western Troops resisting Taiping attack at Shanghai.	916
British Neutrality, In Principle.	916
Foreigners Landing at Woosung, 14 miles above Shanghai, c1840.	918
The Illustrious Lin (Lin Tse-hsu).	925
Sailing Ship Gravina.	927
Chinese Musicians.	934
Sir John Bowring.	937
Beating with the Bamboo.	941
Large Stone Lions.	942
USS Vandalia.	943
Theodor Hamberg.	946
Dr. Melancthon Fish.	957
USS Powhatan.	965
Chinese wheelbarrow transportation.	972
Moon-Cakes.	993
Hari Kari, or self immolation.	1003
Traditional Black Japanese Roof Tiles.	1003
Rev. Wong Kong-Chai.	1005
Red and White Mits (Mittens).	1007
Stone bridges near Shanghai.	1010
<b>Part 12. SHANGHAI, 1856.</b>	
Foreign Silver Coins in Use in Shanghai and Australia.	1029
Sailing Ship N. B. Palmer.	1036
Chinese Cleaning Graves in Australia.	1043
A Bride's Chair.	1045
Chinese Lepers in a Christian Lazarette in Fujian Province.	1046
Mary Fay and her boys.	1053
Ching Ming [Qingmeng], Cleaning Graves of Ancestors. (Artist's Impression).	1057
Opening Rituals of the Siyi (See Yap) Temple, South Melbourne, Australia.	1060
Siyi [See Yup] Temple, South Melbourne, Australia Site occupied 1855.	
Building opened 1866.	1061
See Yup (See Yap; Siyi) Temple, San Francisco, opened 1853.	1062
Chinese Scenes in San Francisco.	1062
See Yup Temple, San Francisco, Interior Showing Altar.	1063
Temple Altar in modern San Francisco.	1063

Siyi [See Yup] Temple, San Francisco, Altar to Guan Di.	1064
Altar in Siyi [See Yup] Temple, Melbourne, Australia.	1064
Heads of decapitated Chinese in cages.	1070
St. Francis Xavier Church, Shanghai. (Formerly Catholic Cathedral).	1072
Yung A Wing [Yung Wing[]], Yale graduate.	1076
Christ Church, Old City of Shanghai (Chinese Congregation).	1080
Church of Our Saviour, Hongkou. (Expatriate Church and School Chapel).	1080
Chinese women's hair dressing.	1084
Foot-Pumped Organs, or Melodeons.	1087
Rev. Samuel Wells Williams.	1092
James Hudson Taylor.	1094
Rev. William Burns.	1094
Floating Bethel for Seamen. (Mission to Seamen).	1097
Plague of Locusts.	1098
Foreign children and their Chinese nurse.	1099
Chinese painting of a licensed beggar.	1104
Image of Chen Huacheng in Shanghai City God Temple.	1105
Opium Smokers, Rich and Poor.	1110
Sailing ship White Swallow.	1119
<b>Part 13. SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1857.</b>	
The Porcelain Tower of Nanking.	1127
USS Minnesota.	1130
Bishop William Stevens.	1031
Bishop Charles McIlvaine.	1031
Yoritomo—First Shogun of Japan, 1147-1199.	1132
Toyotomi Hideyoshi.	1133
Tokugawa Ieyasu.	1134
The “Eight Characters” —betrothal.	1140
The Red Wedding Sedan Chair.	1140
Chinese Funeral Procession.	1145
Dr. Erastus Wentworth (Methodist Episcopal Mission, Foochow).	1156
Belsi Pagoda; Tiger Hill Temple, Soochow [Suzhou].	1158
Hon. William B. Reed. United States Commissioner to China, 1857-1858.	1172
<b>Part 14. SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1858.</b>	
River Passenger Boat	1192
USS Portsmouth.	1204
US Consul General, Mr. Townsend Harris, Nagasaki.	1204
USS San Jacinto.	1204
Captain Francis (Frank) Dupont, USN.	1210
Lord Elgin.	1218
Baron Gros, French minister.	1225
HMS Cruiser [Cruizer].	1238
Japanese Text of Sino-American Treaty of Amity and Commerce.	1243
George “Chinese” Morrison's Internal China Passport, 1894-1895.	1246
Standard Wording for a British Internal Passport for China.	1246
Japanese swift sculling boats.	1247
Japanese war steamer Kankomaru, 1855.	1248
Moriuama Einosuke (interpreter).	1248
Nagasaki Harbor, c 1858.	1250
Deshima Island, Nagasaki, c1810.	1250
Chinese Quarter of Nagasaki.	1253
Abbe Huc.	1256
Catholic Martyrs Memorial, Nagasaki.	1257
Protestant Burial at Shimoda 1856.	1283

Townsend Harris' residence at Shimoda.	1284
President Abraham Lincoln to the Shogun of Japan, 14 November 1861.	1285
<b>Part 15. SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1859.</b>	
Rt. Rev. W Whittingham, Bishop of Maryland.	1288
Rev. Samuel Schereschewsky.	1288
Hangchau [Hangzhou] Temple of Kwanyin [Guanyin], the Goddess of Mercy.	1290
Chaplain Henry Wood, USN.	1293
Japanese Woodcut of American flagship, USS Powhatan.	1294
Japanese Room with Tatami flooring.	1295
Desima (today Deshima) Island c 1858.	1296
Plan of Nagasaki c1859, Pt 1.	1298
Plan of Nagasaki c1859, Pt 2.	1299
The Foreign Settlement (Higashiyamate, "Eastern Hillside"), Nagasaki, c1867.	1300
Brush (Hair Pencil) Writing.	1304
Slate and Pencil.	1304
Donati's Comet 1858.	1305
Rev. Henry Winter Syle, Deaf-Mute son of Rev. Edward W. Syle.	1316
Sir Michael Seymour.	1318
Chinese Imperial Commissioner at Canton [Guangzhou], Yeh.	1319
"Too Many Shylocks," The Principle of United States Neutrality.	1320
Nagasaki View, c158. Deshima Island in the foreground.	1331
Admiral James Hope.	1339
HMS Cormorant.	1340
Rev. Griffith John, London Missionary Society.	1360
Chinese silk fan.	1360
Printed bills and placards.	1361
Hon. John Elliott Ward, 2 <sup>nd</sup> US Minister to Japan.	1369
A partial view of Jeddo [Tokyo].	1370
Japanese sedan chair [norimon].	1371
Edo Imperial Castle, Tokyo, 1859.	1371
Fujiyama (Mt. Fuji): Woodcut by Hokusai.	1381
Sakyamuni Images—Japan.	1385
<b>Part 16. SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1860.</b>	
First Japanese Embassy to the United States, 1860.	1394
Episcopal Mission-House in Nagasaki, 1860.	1394
Shanghai 1860, Showing Protestant Mission Locations & American Settlement.	1407
USS Hartford.	1415
Refugee tents built from matting.	1425
Wading through Peiho River mud to attack the Taku forts.	1434
<b>Part 17. SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1861.</b>	
The Mikado. or Spiritual Emperor of Japan, and his Wives.	1460
Rev. James William Lambuth, <sup>52</sup> Mrs. Lambuth, Rev. Young John Allen.	1471

---

52 Rev. James William Lambuth, Methodist Episcopal Church, South. b. Alabama 1832. Arrived Shanghai with Mrs. Lambuth 17 September 1854. Returned to US on sick leave on 3 September 1861. Returned Shanghai 9 February 1865. Wylie, op cit, p. 231. See Hale, Robert E, (2007) *Death, Beginnings and Travels of Charles Marshall*, online 1 January 2-12 at — <https://sites.google.com/site/accsacw/Home/charles-k--marshall2> Founder of Methodist Episcopal Mission, South, in Japan. d. Kobe, Japan, 1892. Lambuth, J. W., In memoriam, James William Lambuth, D.D. : veteran missionary of China, founder of the Southern Methodist Mission of Japan. Kobe, Kobe Publishing, c1892). Cain, Rev. J. B. Cain, "The Story of the Lambuth Family: Millsaps College Archives, online 1 January 2102 at — [http://www.millsaps.edu/library/library\\_cain\\_lambuth.php](http://www.millsaps.edu/library/library_cain_lambuth.php)

	Admiral Sir James Hope RN.	1479
	Rev. Guido Herman Verbeck.	1493
	Rev. Dr. E. C. Bridgman.	1503
<b>Part 18.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1862.</b>	
	Japanese Ambassadors to Europe.	1518
	Ukiyo-e, Japanese Woodcut Print. Artist; Hokusai. Wave near Kanagawa.	1526
	Dr. William Lockhart, London Missionary Society, Peking.	1530
	Steamer Golden Gate.	1533
	Destruction of steamer Golden Gate.	1533
<b>Part 19.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1863.</b>	
	Japanese woodcut of murder of Mr. Charles Richardson [Namamugi Incident].	1558
	Japanese Samurai.	1558
	Robert H Pruyn, American Minister to Japan.	1558
	Rev. Dr. James C. Hepburn.	1560
	Grave of Mrs. Caroline Keith, Greenwood Cemetery, New York.	1561
	Panoramic View of Yokohama 1863.	1565
<b>Part 20.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1864.</b>	
	Mr. Anson Burlingame. American Minister to China.	1572
	Japanese Noblemen.	1575
	Japanese Soldiers and Samurai.	1576
	Delivery of Compensation for murder of Mr. Richardson-Namamugi Incident.	1578
	Confirmation of Correct Amount of Compensation for Namamugi Incident.	1579
	Suez Harbour showing Suez Hotal and the English Cemetery on the island 1864.	1582
	Suez Harbour and the island, c2012.	1583
	CSS Alabama.	1588
	Tomb of Bishop William Jones Boone, Shantung Road Cemetery, Shanghai.	1594
	Nagasaki 1862 showing Protestant Church.	1604
<b>Part 21.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1865-1866.</b>	
	Obstructed by water lilies.	1642
	General Frederick Townsend Ward.	1645
	Silver Island, Yangste River.	1647
	Rev. Griffith John, (LMS).	1648
	Rev. Young John Allen.	1651
	Interior of the Episcopal Church of Our Saviour, Hongkou, showing organ and extended chancel platform.	1652
	Deacon Dzon or Dzau, Church Missionary Society, Shanghai.	1665
	Rt. Rev. Channing Moore Williams, 2 <sup>nd</sup> Episcopal Missionary Bishop in China.	1667
	A Chinese Bible Woman.	1669
	Woo Hoong Neok — We Hongyu.	1670
	Rev. James H. Ballagh, US Dutch Reformed Church, Japan.	1673
	Rev. Samuel Robbins Brown, US Dutch Reformed Church, Japan.	1679
	St. John's Chapel, New York, scene of consecration of Bishop Williams.	1690
	“Joss-House: or Chinese Temple, Auburn, Sacramento, c 2012.	1693
	Shanghai Public and Thomas Hanbury School for (Foreign) Boys, Hongkew.	1698
	Former Thomas Hanbury School for (Foreign) Girls, built 1891.	1698

---

Rev. Young John Allen of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. b. 3 January 1839, Georgia. Attended Emory College. See Young John Allen Papers, Emory College, online 1 January 2012 at — <http://beck.library.emory.edu/youngjohnallen/overview.php>  
 Arrived Shanghai with Mrs. Allen 13 July 1860. d. 30 May 1907. Wylie, op cit, p. 260.  
 See online 1 January 2012 at — [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Young\\_John\\_Allen](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Young_John_Allen)  
 See also Young John Allen, Biographical Dictionary of Chinese Christianity, online 1 January 2012 at — <http://www.bdcconline.net/en/stories/a/allen-young-john.php>

<b>Part 22.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1865-1866.</b>	
	Steam Ship Chauncey-Pacific Steamship Line.	1701
	Mr. John Fryer.	1711
	Vung Piang Suvoong-Kenyon College.	1713
	St. Ann's Church, Brooklyn.	1715
	Miss Susan Waring. (Mrs. S. Schereschewsky).	1719
<b>Part 23.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1868.</b>	
	Sailing Ship Great Republic.	1727
	The Last Shogun on Japan (Tycoon), 1867.	1737
	Ningpo City Wall.	1743
	Mazu-Sea Goddess.	1744
	Ningpo, Sea-God Temple.	1744
	Mohammedan Mosque: Interior; Exterior.	1745
	Anti-Christian Placard: Christians Stealing Eyes, c 1892.	1747
	Detail Showing Foreigners removing eyes.	1747
	General Robert B. Vanvalkenburgh, U.S. Minister to Japan.	1754
<b>Part 24.</b>	<b>SHANGHAI &amp; JAPAN, 1869.</b>	
	Harmonium.	1763
	Amy Oxley [Wilkinson] CMS Australia, playing a harmonium at her Blind School, Fuzhou.	1764
	The Forbidden (Tartar) city of Peking [Beijing].	1770
	Observatory, Peking.	1770
	Examination Halls, Peking.	1770
	The Altar of Heaven, Peking.	1771
	Prince Kung.	1772
	Rev. S. Schereschewsky.	1786

## TABLES

<b>Table 1.</b>	Australian Missionaries in China by Colony of Origin, 1890-1950.	10
<b>Table 2.</b>	Missionary Impact on China, 1807-1951.	51
<b>Table 3.</b>	China: Missionary Murders Prior to 1899.	69
<b>Table 4.</b>	China—Protestant Missionary Locations, 1846-1890.	72
<b>Table 5.</b>	Protestant Missions and Missionaries, 1870.	73
<b>Table 6.</b>	China: Protestant Missionary Numbers, 1840-1928	77
<b>Table 7.</b>	China, Protestant Missionaries:Length of Service.	81
<b>Table 8.</b>	Slavery in the Key Southern States, 1830-1860.	102
<b>Table 9.</b>	Slavery in Beaufort County, South Carolina.	103
<b>Table 10.</b>	United States—Gender Balance in Protestant Missions, 1830-1929.	117
<b>Table 11.</b>	Mortality of Missionary Children in China and Japan.	119
<b>Table 12.</b>	China—Protestant Missionary and Conversion Statistics.	126
<b>Table 13.</b>	Main Sources of European Immigration to the United States.	141
<b>Table 14.</b>	Immigration to the United States, 1820-1960/	143
<b>Table 15.</b>	United States Census, 1850— The number of natives of England inhabiting the United States.	145
<b>Table 16.</b>	Population of the Foreign Settlement in Shanghai, 1845-1935.	458
<b>Table 17.</b>	Foreign Population of Shanghai, 1844-1851.	832
<b>Table 18.</b>	Highest Rates of Exchange at Shanghai for Six-Month’s Credits on Shanghai.	1124
<b>Table 19.</b>	PEC Mission Contributions by Diocese, 1858.	1211
<b>Table 20.</b>	Statistics of the Catholic Missions in the Province of Kiangnan, July 1858.	1242

# MAPS

<b>Part 4.</b>	Dutch East Indies	214
<b>Part 7.</b>	The Island of java, Dutch East Indies.	429
<b>Part 8.</b>	The American Settlement at Shanghai. Shanghai in 1851. Woosung Village to Shanghai	438 441 523
<b>Part 9.</b>	Map of Kulangsu Island, Ningpo, Showing Missionary Establishments.	738
<b>Part 10.</b>	An Approximate Map of Chinese Languages and Dialects. The Course of the Grand Canal, Hangzhou-Shanghai to Beijing.	791 840
<b>Part 11.</b>	Extent of Taiping Rebellion, Early 1854 and Early 1862. Area of Taiping Control in Yangtse Valley, 1830s and 1860s. A Dutch Map of the East Indies, 1683. Taiping March from South to North China, c1854. Loochoo Islands, Okinawa.	896 901 920 928 1009
<b>Part 13</b>	Missionary Locations in Shanghai.	1143
<b>Part 14.</b>	Shanghai to Lake Taihu. Location of City of Dzang Zok. (90 miles NW of Shanghai). Location of Simoda (today Shimoda). Map of the Taku Forts.	1191 1196 1203 1223
<b>Part 15.</b>	Plan of Nagasaki c1859, Pt 1. Plan of Nagasaki c1859, Pt 2.	1241 1242
<b>Part 16.</b>	Shanghai 1860, Showing Protestant Mission Locations & American Settlement.	1365
<b>Part 17.</b>	Province of Shangtung (Shandong).	1473
<b>Part 18.</b>	Tsushima Island. Map of Northern China.	1514 1553
<b>Part 20.</b>	Map of Peking, Showing Legation Quarter.	1574



## **CHINESE TREATIES WITH FOREIGN POWERS.**

### **China's External Relations—A History.**

Online 1 July 2013 at —

<http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/>

Overview.

Online 1 July 2013 at —

[http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/treaties\\_overview](http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/treaties_overview)

## **SINO-AMERICAN TREATIES.**

### **China's External Relations—A History.**

Online 1 July 2013 at —

<http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/treaties/2>

<http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/node/207>

## **SINO-BRITISH TREATIES.**

### **China's External Relations—A History.**

Online 1 July 2013 at —

<http://www.chinaforeignrelations.net/treaties/3>

**PRESIDENTS OF THE UNITED STATES:  
During the Ministry and Episcopate of  
William Jones Boone Sr. 1837-1864**



**Martin Van Buren (1837-1841)**



**William Henry Harrison (1841)**



**John Tyler (1841-1845)**



**James K. Polk (1841-1849)**



**Zachary Taylor (1849-1850)**



**Millard Fillmore (1850-1853)**



**Franklin Pierce (1853-1857)**



**James Buchanan (1857-1861)**



**Abraham Lincoln (1861-1865)**

## WORKS IN CHINESE TRANSLATION BY EPISCOPAL MISSIONARIES TO 1900.

Wylie, Alexander, *Memorials of Protestant Christian Missionaries to the Chinese*,  
(Shanghai, American Presbyterian Mission Press, 1867).  
(List all Protestant missionaries, including Episcopal Mission.)

Works by Episcopal missionaries will be found in  
Lin Mei-mei, *The Episcopal Missions in China, 1835-1900*, PhD (unpublished)  
University of Texas at Austin, May 1984, pp 405-416.

See *Spirit of Missions*, Vol 61 No 12, December 1896.

Inventory of the 19th Century Missionary Works in Chinese at the Asian division,  
The Library of Congress, Washington, USA.  
(online 1 July 2013 at <https://ojs.lib.byu.edu/spc/index.php/JEAL/article/download/.../8533f>)

see also <https://ojs.lib.byu.edu/spc/index.php/JEAL/article/download/.../13015f>

Kuiper, Koos, *List of Chinese Works by Early Nineteenth-Century Protestant Missionaries* (until 1967),  
(Leiden, East Asian Library, Leiden University Library, 2009).

Titles in Chinese.

## CHINESE DIALECTS & ROMANISATION.

The ordinary people of Shanghai as with most people in central and southern China in the 19<sup>th</sup> century spoke a distinct dialect [*the Wu dialect*]<sup>53</sup> that had some links to Mandarin, the official language used by the Chinese intellectual elite (literati or scholar-gentry) and an essential element in Chinese national administration. The Rev. John Liggins of the American Church Mission provided this report describing a literati from Beijing:

Mr. Zung, the teacher from Peking referred to in my journal of yesterday, came to see me this afternoon. My teacher had gone ashore to seek for a house to rent, and as he was away four hours, I was deprived of his assistance in conversing with Mr. Zung. He was quite able, however, to understand the Shanghai dialect which I spoke, though I could understand but very little of the Peking Mandarin which he spoke.<sup>54</sup>

The Protestant missionaries were committed to providing the Bible and other Christian literature into local dialects, generally using a romanized form that uneducated people found easier to read and understand than classical characters. Eugene Stock of the Church Missionary Society summed up the general attitude:

It was at this time that the romanized system of transliterating and printing Chinese was adopted. It was found that the written language (Wen-li) was only known to the educated few; that the masses could not be reached by it; and that it was easier for an illiterate Chinaman to learn the Roman alphabet. Hence was undertaken the difficult task of transliteration; or rather—for this term is not strictly applicable—of reducing the spoken languages to writing with Roman letters. This has proved in some districts a very successful method of instructing the humbler classes.<sup>55</sup>

There are a number of contemporary missionary publications dealing with the issue of romanized Shanghai dialect. Similar publications exist for other dialect groups. See, for example: Edkins, J., *A Vocabulary of the Shanghai Dialect*, (Shanghai, Presbyterian Mission Press, 1869).

The impact of local dialects on this collection is a major problem in identifying modern names and locations.

As a result of the universal teaching of Mandarin Chinese in all educational institutions regional dialects in modern China. are in decline.<sup>56</sup> The combination of local dialects with variant phonetic written renderings makes it difficult, and in most cases impossible, to provide readers with place or personal names in modern usage.

---

53 See online 1 January 2102 at — [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wu\\_Chinese](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wu_Chinese)

54 Rev. John Liggins, 16 February 1868, from Dzang -Zok. *Spirit of Missions*, Vol 23 No 8, August 1858, pp 394-396. The pagination of the August 1858 issue is inaccurate and the early pages start at 294-8 before being corrected to 395.

55 Stock, Eugene, *The History of the Church Missionary Society*, (London, Church Missionary Society, 1899), Vol 2, p. 204.

56 See “Apology of Using Dialect,” online 1 January 2013 at—  
[http://www.china.org.cn/china/2011-09/05/content\\_23353472.htm](http://www.china.org.cn/china/2011-09/05/content_23353472.htm)

# THE CHUNG HUA SHENG HUNG HUI,

聖公會

## [The Holy Catholic Church in China—The Anglican Church in China.] Chronology of the period 1835-1865.

FROM: Gray, Rev. G. F. S., (*Anglicans in China: A History of the Chung Hua Sheng King Hwei*, (The Episcopal China Mission History Project, 1996), *mss*, Yale Divinity School Special Collections. Edited by Ms Martha Smalley, Yale University.

(Please note that some amendments have been made to the text.)

In the chronology that follows, entries are listed under the following abbreviations:  
General (prior to formation of dioceses or relating to various areas)

- [HK] Hong Kong diocese (Victoria)
- [FU] Fujian (Fukien) diocese
- [ZH] Zhejiang (Chekiang) diocese
- [SI] Shanghai diocese
- [SG] Shandong (Shantung) diocese
- [NC] North China diocese
- [HA] Hankou (Hankow) diocese
- [O] Other dioceses

- 1835 Americans Rev. Henry Lockwood and Rev. Francis Hanson arrived in Guangzhou. They found that they could do little there because of suspicion and hostility.
- 1836 An edict appeared in Guangzhou forbidding Chinese to become Christians and forbidding the dissemination of Christianity. Lockwood and Hanson moved to Singapore, and after few months, to Djakarta [then Batavia] where they devoted themselves to learning Chinese and Malay. They also began a school for Chinese children.
- 1837 American clergyman Rev. William Jones Boone arrived at Djakarta. Lockwood and Hanson returned to America, for reasons of health.
- 1840 Boone went to Macao for reasons of health.
- 1840-1842 Vincent Stanton a British freelance missionary on the China coast.
- 1841 Boone moved to Xiamen [Xiamen], Fujian. Death of Mrs. Sally Boone from cholera.
- 1842 Treaty of Nanjing. Five ports opened to foreign residence: Guangzhou, Xiamen, Fuzhou, Ningbo, Shanghai
- 1843 Boone returned to U.S. to place children with family and to recruit more workers; he brought with him two Chinese, one of whom was **Huang Guang Cai**. See <http://www.bdcconline.net/en/stories/h/huang-guangcai.php>  
[HK] Rev. Vincent Stanton appointed Colonial Chaplain Hong Kong, a portion of his stipend provided by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel (SPG). Built a church [on site of present St. John's Cathedral] and established an institution [later St. Paul's College] to train Chinese catechists and teachers.
- 1844 US Episcopal House of Bishops appointed Boone as "Missionary Bishop" in Xiamen and other parts of China for the American Church Mission (ACM).  
Boone returns to China, accompanied by two clergy and their wives and three women teachers.  
Rev. George Smith and Rev. Thomas McClatchie sent by CMS to visit Hong Kong and the five Treaty ports.
- 1845 Boone and company arrived in Hong Kong. Decided to settle in Shanghai, as instructed by ACM committee.  
Smith and McClatchie arrived in Shanghai where McClatchie settled. After continuing his tour of the Treaty ports, Smith concluded that the CMS should begin work in Shanghai and Ningbo, and, if possible, also at Fuzhou. Smith reported to the CMS

- committee that China needed a body of preaching missionaries, not primarily teachers. This was in contrast to the ACM, which stressed the importance of schools.
- [SI] McClatchie rented a house within the walls of the old city of Shanghai; could preach fluently in Shanghai dialect by end of 1847; had translated parts of Church of England prayer book.
- 1846 [SI] Boys' school begun by Bishop Boone; boys taught mainly in English by Miss Emma Jones and Miss Mary Morse. Boone also involved in translation of New Testament. ACM began evangelistic work - preaching, distribution of tracts. Huang Guang Cai baptized by Bishop Boone.
- 1848 [ZH] CMS missionaries Rev. Robert Henry Cobbold from Cambridge and Rev. William Armstrong Russell from Dublin came to Ningbo.  
[SI] First Holy Trinity Church in Shanghai opened to be parish church for Church of England business community. Present Holy Trinity Church opened 1868. Closed after Communist Revolution in 1949 and returned to China Christian Council, the Protestant Church body in China. There is no Anglican church in modern China, outside Hong Kong and Macao.
- 1849 [HK] Smith consecrated Colonial Anglican Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong, with oversight of all British Anglican work in the Far East. Until 1861 there was little work directly with Chinese in Hong Kong, primarily chaplaincy work among Europeans.  
[FU] CMS decided to begin work in Fuzhou. Work in Fujian was under the jurisdiction of the Bishop of Victoria, Hong Kong, until 1906.
- 1850 [FU] Dr. the Rev. William Welton and Rev. Robert David Jackson arrived in Fuzhou. Welton, considered the father of the Fuzhou Mission, returned to England in 1856 for reasons of health.  
[ZH] Rev. Frederick Foster Gough came to join Russell in Ningbo.  
[SI] St. Paul's Church opened as centre for CMS work. Christ Church (Chinese) consecrated, first regular church building of ACM.
- 1851 [ZH] First baptisms by Anglicans in Zhejiang - a tailor, Pao Hsueh-i, and a servant of Russell's, Hou Yueh-li. Early years in Zhejiang more promising than in Fujian.  
[SI] First Chinese baptized by CMS missionaries in Shanghai - three blind men.  
[SI] Three additional missionaries joined ACM: Rev. and Mrs. Robert Nelson, and Miss Lydia Mary Fay. Miss Emma Jones began boarding school for girls.  
[SI] Rev. Huang Guang Cai ordained as deacon.
- 1852 [FU] Jackson moved to Ningbo; Welton remained until 1856, preaching, distributing the Chinese New Testament, helping opium smokers.  
[ZH] Russell married adopted daughter of Miss Mary Aldersey, a Congregationalist who started the first school for girls in China in Ningbo, 1844. Aldersey later transferred part of her work to the CMS committee.
- 1853 [SI] English Bishop of Hong Kong Rt. Rev. George Smith made a primary visitation of CMS work in Shanghai. Informal agreement made by Bishop Smith and Bishop Boone to avoid jurisdictional conflicts.
- 1853-1854 [SI] Church work affected in Shanghai by local Triad Rebellion led by Cantonese and Fujianese residents.
- 1854 [FU] School started by Welton.  
[ZH] Romanized Chinese script devised by Russell and others used in Anglican schools in Zhejiang.  
[SI] CMS missionary Rev. John Shaw Burdon arrived in Shanghai; did extensive itineration work outside of Shanghai.
- 1855 [FU] Two additional CMS missionaries arrived: Rev. Francis M'Caw and Rev. Matthew Fearnley.  
[ZH] Attempts made to begin work outside of Ningbo.  
[SI] End of Triad uprising in Shanghai. Bishop Boone visits USA. Rev. Robert N. Nelson in charge. Evangelistic centre established in Chiangwan for which Rev. Huang Guang Cai had responsibility.
- 1856 [SI] Another Chinese ordained as deacon, Rev. Tong (Tung) Chu Kiung of Suzhou - first graduate of the mission school to be ordained.

- 1857 [SI] Rev. Edward W. Syle (American Church Mission) started a school for the blind. First Christian Industrial School in China.
- 1858 [FU] Additional CMS missionary arrived, Rev. George Smith, (not the bishop). Until 1860 work proceeded very slowly in Fuzhou; CMS considered abandoning Fuzhou to concentrate on Zhejiang. Smith urged perseverance.  
[ZH] Rev. George Evans Moule of CMS began work in Ningbo. Episcopal visit by Bishop George Smith; conference held including Chinese staff. At their insistence it was decided to begin work in Hangzhou.  
[SI] Rev. William Henry Collins joined Burdon. Rev. John Hobson chaplain to British community in Shanghai until his death in 1862.  
[SI] Work begun in Changshu (Dzang Zok) by Americans Rev. John Liggins, Rev. Channing M. Williams and Rev. Huang Guang Cai.
- 1859 [ZH] Rev. J.S. Burdon made a visit of investigation to Hangzhou. Early efforts were not hindered. CMS sent catechists Pao Hsueh-i and Stephen Ch'en, and English priest Rev. Thomas Samuel Fleming. Burdon requested by Chinese authorities to leave during second Opium War.  
[SI] ACM and CMS working in Shanghai. Bishop of Victoria proposed that CMS focus on work in Zhejiang province and ACM in Jiangsu province (including Shanghai). Archbishop of Canterbury rejected proposal as English law did not allow joint jurisdiction but encouraged informal cooperation.
- 1860 [FU] Rev. W.H. Collins, CMS priest and medical doctor, opened dispensary.  
[ZH] Rev. William Armstrong Russell, Rev. Frederick Foster Gough, and Rev. G.E. Moule in Ningbo; worked with opium addicts.  
[ZH] Burdon and Fleming began work in Yuyao near Shaoxing until forced to withdraw to Ningbo by Tai'ping rebels.
- 1861 [FU] Four Chinese baptized. Situation improved rapidly for a time.  
[ZH] Rev. Arthur Evans Moule came to Zhejiang. After capture of Ningbo by Tai'pings in December, Moule and an American missionary had charge of an asylum for refugees. Disturbance disrupted progress of four Chinese preparing for ordination.  
[SI] Americans Rev. Henry M. Parker and Rev. Dudley D. Smith left Shanghai to settle in Yantai (Chefoo), Shandong.  
[SG] Parker and Smith and their wives sent to begin work in Yantai (Chefoo); they soon moved to a nearby village. About six months after his arrival Parker, along with an American Baptist missionary, Holmes, was beheaded by Tai'ping rebels.
- 1861-1865 [SI] ACM work suffered because of Civil War in U.S. No money supplied for three years. Within a few years the ACM mission was reduced from twelve clergy, four candidates for orders, and twelve women missionaries to two priests, one deacon, one ordinand, two women missionaries.
- 1862 [HK] Rev. Thomas Stringer (CMS) sent to begin regular mission work among Chinese of Hong Kong. Diocesan Native Female School started with Miss Baxter in charge; funded largely by European residents of Hong Kong.  
[FU] CMS Irishman Rev. John Richard Wolfe arrived in Fuzhou.  
[ZH] Burdon, Russell, and Fleming left Ningbo.  
[SG] Dudley Smith returned to U.S. with his daughter following his wife's death.  
[NC] Burdon of CMS was first Anglican missionary to settle in Beijing. Lithuanian-American Rev. Samuel I.J. Schereshevsky arrived later in year, seeking to improve his knowledge of the Mandarin dialect.
- 1863 [HK] Lo Shen-yuan ordained deacon. [Lo Sam-yuen, catechist of Anglican Church Mission in Victoria, Australia 1855-1860). In charge St. Stephen's Church, Kowloon).  
[FU] Smith died, leaving to Wolfe's care 13 baptized Christians and five catechumens; Wolfe soon forced to Hong Kong for health reasons. With no Anglican missionaries remaining in Fuzhou, Church people were shepherded by catechist Huang Ch'iu-teh.  
[SI] Collins followed Burdon to Beijing; Shanghai without a CMS missionary for some years.  
[SI] Huang Guang Cai made first Chinese Anglican priest, given charge of Christ Church.  
[NC] Burdon joined by Thomas McClatchie and Charles Atkinson, both of whom soon left, and W.H. Collins. Burdon opened a school.

- [NC] Dr. J. A. Stewart, first SPG missionary sent to China, settled in Beijing. Joined by young priest F.R. Mitchell.
- 1864 [HK] Bishop Smith resigned; replaced by Rt. Rev. Charles Alford.
- [FU] CMS property attacked in Fuzhou. Wolfe, returning from Hong Kong, obtained compensation from Chinese authorities and buildings were rebuilt. Rev. Arthur William Cribb arrived in Fuzhou. For several years there was relatively rapid expansion of the Church in Fujian, largely through the efforts of Wolfe. Work was begun in Lianjiang, Luoyuan, Gutian, Ningde, and Xiapu.
- [FU] Girls' school opened in Fuzhou by CMS - only Anglican organised educational work in area.
- [ZH] Conditions began to improve after Tai'ping turmoil. Work begun in Hangzhou by G.E. Moule and catechist Tsang.
- [SI] Bishop William Jones Boone died in Shanghai. Boone can be considered as much as any the founder of the Zhonghua Shenggong Hui. No successor consecrated for two years after his death. Rev. Elliot H. Thomson and Rev. Huang Guang Cai continued the work in Shanghai and spread it to Suzhou.
- [NC] Steward recalled by SPG committee in London for purchasing a site for the mission work without authorization. Mitchell went to Shanghai.
- 1864 [NC] By this time, Burdon and Schereshevsky had translated most of the Prayer Book into Mandarin and were working on translation of the Bible. They were part of a committee that also included McClatchie (CMS), Rev. Joseph Edkins (London Missionary Society), Rev. W.A.P. Martin (American Presbyterian), and Rev. Henry Blodget (American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions). Schereshevsky spoke at CMS evangelistic meetings.
- 1865 [HK] Charles Frederick Warren continued work of Stringer among Chinese.
- [ZH] Opium refuge opened in Hangzhou.



## RESOURCES.



Key collection of Anglican and Episcopal Church Resources at  
<http://anglicansonline.org/resources/history.html#asia>

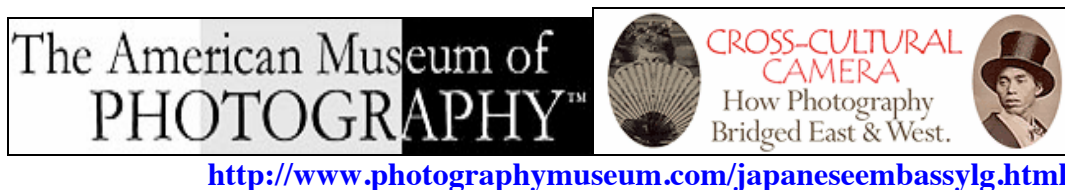
Extracts from



Kindly provided by Mr. Wayne Kempton, Diocesan Archivist and  
Historiographer, The Episcopal Diocese of New York.



<http://www.lib.unc.edu/blogs/civilwar/index.php/about/>



# VISUALISING CULTURES

Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT).

<http://ocw.mit.edu/ans7870/21f/21f.027/home/>

Visualizing Cultures weaves images and scholarly commentary in innovative ways to illuminate social and cultural history. Founded in 2002 by MIT Professors John Dower and Shigeru Miyagawa, Visualizing Cultures exploits the unique qualities of the Web as a publishing platform to enable scholars, teachers, and others to: (1) examine large bodies of previously inaccessible images; (2) compose original texts with unlimited numbers of full-color, high-resolution images; and (3) use new technology to explore unprecedented ways of analyzing and presenting images that open windows on modern history.

Visualizing Cultures is a gateway to seeing history through images that once had wide circulation among peoples of different times and places. We do historical research this way as scholars to better understand how people saw themselves, how they saw others including foreigners and enemies, and how in turn others saw them. Visualizing Cultures presents images from the historical record uncensored. It is not an art-history or art-appreciation site. Displaying images from the historical record does not represent an endorsement of their content.